



THE ANSWER

(Part - 2)

*All you need to know
about Sin and Power of Sin*

By: Group Captain A Iruthaya Raj

INTROUDCTION

In the book "The Answer Part-1" we understood that we are created in likeness of God and we live by every Word spoken by God. We also understood that God create us with a specific purpose which is; "we should live righteous life by reposing faith in him which pleases him and we should remain holy & glorify God's Spirit in us". (1 Cor 6:19-20) God wants that we should surrender our whole being completely and offer ourselves to him as a thanks giving sacrifice (Rom 12:1-2) so that God's will is fulfilled in us to accomplish his eternal plan. Of course while accomplishing God's eternal plan, righteous people go through many sufferings because in God's will human sufferings are most needed for forgiveness of sins and Salvation. (Col 1:24)

That's why "the most righteous person - Jesus Christ" was sent by God the Father to this world; to suffer for forgiveness of sins, to redeem mankind from the slavery of sin and give them salvation.(Jh 3:16-17) Through sufferings of Jesus Christ we are given the most precious gift "Eternal Life". But, we have an option choose between 'condemnation' and "eternal life" in presence of our Creator by becoming as part of Christ's Body with Jesus Christ as its head. This is the purpose and pleasure of God in his eternal plan. (Eph 1:7-10)

Knowing what are the blessings in God's eternal plan, the liar, deceiver, and enemy of God the Satan is roaming around to spread lies, lure people to disobey God's Law and deceive them of their "eternal life". He deceived Adam & Eve to disobey God and sowed "seed of sin" in human flesh. Hence man became slave for sin. This sin has brought separation between from God and man. This sin has destructive power. The power of sin first binds mankind with its invisible chains and enslaves them as captives and refugees of Satan. The power of sin destroys all our blessings. Finally sin destroys our body like venom of snake and condemns the soul to hell.

This book enlightens believers on: How Sin corrupts the world? How does the power of sin work in man to destroy his blessings? Why do we sin repeatedly? How to receive freedom from sinful-self? And how to rule over the power of sin for ever? Also it enlightens on a very interesting question; "why God in his Wisdom permitted man to fall in sin?"

Since this book enlightens you on Sin and how the Satan works, the Satan will not like you reading this book. Hence you are advised to Pray to Jesus for protection through his blood and also take protection of Mother Mary through Rosary before reading.

CONTENTS

Page No

1. WHAT IS SIN?.....	07
i) Why do we commit Sin?.....	07
ii) Is our mind kept in darkness?.....	08
iii) Are we blind for truth?.....	10
iv) Is our approach to solve problem correct?.....	12
2. HOW SIN SPREAD TO CURRUPT THE WORLD?.....	17
i) What are the twelve stages in which man falls in sin.....	17
ii) Sin over a period becomes acceptable way of life.....	19
3. WHY ARE WE SINFUL?.....	28
i) Satan exploits our desires & weaknesses.....	28
ii) Jesus said; "our flesh is weak for sin".....	28
iii) Why do we sin?.....	29
iv) What makes us sinful?.....	29
v) Sins that pour out from our heart.....	30
vi) Sins that enters us through this world.....	32
4. HOW DOSE SIN DESTROY OUR BLESSING?.....	37
i) What happens when we commit Sin?.....	38
ii) Do we lose God's presence by living in sin?.....	38
iii) Are we foolish to follow the world and commit sin?.....	38
iv) Is our soul dead for God?.....	39
v) What does God say about sin?.....	41
vi) What does God say about sinners?.....	42
vii) What is God's final warning for sinners?.....	46
viii) How to avoid sin and stay alive for God?.....	47
5. IS THE POWER OF SIN FEEDING ON OUR BODY?.....	48
i) What is God's will for us?.....	49
ii)What is the Power of sin?.....	50
iii) Are we under bondage?.....	52
6. HOW DOES SATAN WORK?.....	54
i) What was Man's status before he committed sin?.....	56
ii) What is Man's status after he committed sin?.....	57
iii) How do we live this spiritual life in God's love?.....	58
iv) How God's love is protecting us from evil spirits?.....	59

- v) How does Satan enter our body & soul?..... 60
- vi) How do we act during moments of temptations?..... 62
- vii) What happens when satan enters our body?..... 63
- viii) Satan (sin) comes to steal..... 63
- ix) Satan (sin) comes to kill..... 65
- x) Satan (sin) comes to destroy our soul & eternal life..... 66
- xi) Sin is systematic spiritual process to destroy eternal life 69

7. DOES SATAN HAS POWER OVER MAN?..... 71

- i) Satan has No power over children of God?..... 72
- ii) Sinners give Satan power over themselves..... 72
- iii) Does God permit Satan to have power on believers..... 73

8. ARE WE IGNORANT ABOUT THE POWER GIVE TO US ?..... 74

- i) Fear looms over man..... 74
- ii) God has given us power over evil spirits..... 74
- iii) Are we using the Power & Authority?..... 75
- iv) Does God put his children to test?..... 77
- v) Why does God put his people to test?..... 78
- vi) Will God provide a way out?..... 79
- vii) Is our attempt sincere to give up sin?..... 80
- viii) How do we react to the situations?..... 81
- ix) Is power of sin compelling us to be unrighteous?..... 81
- x) Are we bound by invisible chains?..... 82

9. HOW DO WE RECEIVE THE POWER FROM ABOVE?..... 84

- i) What is the answer? Where is the solution?..... 84
- ii) What is the richness (power) in Word of God?..... 86
- iii) Do you realise richness & power in the Word?..... 86
- iv) The Holy Spirit will transform your inner being..... 87
- v) Do you experience fullness of Christ in you?..... 90
- vi) How to make God’s presence as permanent experience?. 92
- vii) God will transform you as a wall of bronze..... 95

10. WHY DO WE SIN AGAIN AND AGAIN?..... 96

- i) Are we aware of the blessings that are promised?..... 96
- ii) Do we lose our blessings due to sin?..... 98
- iii) How to protect our freedom from Satan?..... 99
- iv) What are eight steps to protect our freedom?..... 100

- v) Does fasting help in protecting our freedom?.....106
- vi) Offer yourself as a living sacrifice to God.....108
- vii) Does God want to protect our freedom?..... 109
- viii) Help comes from the Holy Spirit.....110
- ix) Are you with the Lord in difficult times?..... 111
- x) God’s promise to fight for us in our struggle.....113
- xi) Will the power from above deliver us?.....114

11. HOW TO RECEIVE FREEDOM FROM SINFUL-SELF?.....116

- i) Are we struggling with-in ourselves?.....116
- ii) How to receive freedom from our inner desires?.....118
- iii) Dose the decision to commit sin spring with-in us?..... 118
- iv) Is desire for sin more dangerous than sin itself?..... 119
- v) Do we reject sound doctrine to follow sinful desires..... 120
- vi) Who can walk over his desires to commit sin?..... 121
- vii) Will meditation on Word of God transform us?..... 122
- viii) Are you strengthened by his grace in inner-self?..... 124
- ix) Are you More than a Conqueror in Christ?..... 125

12. HOW DOES HOLY SPIRIT HELP TO OVER COME SIN?..... 126

- i) God said; There is no safety for sinners..... 126
- ii) What is the Power in the Name Jesus?.....126
- iii) What are the Spiritual truths in the Name Jesus?.....127
- iv) What do we discern in the Name Jesus?.....128
- v) Will fruits of the Spirit give power over sin?.....129
- vi) God guarantees freedom from our weaknesses.....141

13. HOW TO OVERCOME TEMPTATIONS AND SIN.....144

- i)Can we overcome temptations being united with Christ?...144
- ii) How Armour of God help to overcome temptations?.....145
- iii) Are you united with Christ through his Words?..... 151
- iv) Do you want to give up your fight against sin?.....152

14. ARE YOU READY TO FIGHT THE HOLY WAR?..... 153

- i) Did God call you to fight this holy war?..... 153
- ii) God encourages his servants to fight this Holy War..... 153
- iii) Will God keep us safe in this war?..... 155
- iv) How will fasting protect us in this holy war?..... 155

- v) How to use God’s Words to fight this war?.....158
- vi) God’s promises to protect us from power of sin..... 160
- iv) You will never lose in this holy war.....162

- 15. ARE WE GIVEN POWER TO RULE OVER SIN?..... 164
 - i) The promise for protection works in two ways.....164
 - ii) God’s protection through the Sacraments.....164
 - iii) Did Jesus give authority to rule over sin?.....168
 - iv) Did God promise to lead us in this spiritual life?.....169
 - v) Are we blind for spiritual truths about us?..... 170
 - vi) Are we blind for spiritual truth about prayer?.....172
 - vi) Are we are blind for spiritual truths about sin?..... 173

- 16. WHAT ARE THE ROADS THAT WE NEVER TRAVELLED?..... 174
 - i) What is God’s eternal plan.....174
 - ii) Eight roads in which God leads his chosen people.....174

- 17. AUTHOR’S TESTIMONY182
 - i) The roads in which God led the Author.....182

- 18. WHO CAN WE RULE OVER SATAN FOREVER?.....190
 - i) A person who has Desire for Wisdom will rule..... 191
 - ii) Wisdom will prepare you to rule a kingdom.....192
 - iii) You will rule the nations.....193
 - iv) ‘Value your Throne & Symbols’ to receive power..... 194
 - v) Honour Wisdom to rule over Satan..... 196
 - vi) You will rule over your sinful-self forever..... 199
 - vii) You will break out of the city gates and go free..... 200
 - viii) Do you doubt God’s promises?..... 201

- 19. HOW DOES HUMAN MIND REACT TO GOD’S WORDS?.....203

- 20. WHAT IS GOD’S FINAL CALL TO GIVE UP SIN?215
 - i) Do not allow your mind to deceive you.....215
 - ii) Do not disobey God’s Word and lose blessing.....215
 - iii) Do not doubt Jesus Christ.....215
 - iv) Humble yourself and accept the Word of God.....216
 - v) Give up your stubbornness.....216

- vi) Allow God to transform you..... 217
- vii) Allow the Holy Spirit to take control on you..... 218
- viii) God’s mark of ownership gives you freedom..... 218

- 21. CAN WE RULE OVER SIN LIKE A KING?..... 220

- 22. WHY DID GOD PERMIT MAN TO FALL IN SIN?..... 222
 - i) God’s Eternal Plan for Mankind..... 222
 - ii) God permitted man to fall in sin..... 224
 - iii) God did not want to condemn man for eternal damnation.... 225
 - iv) God made us sinful to stand in awe of him..... 227
 - v) God made us sinful to depend on his mercy..... 230
 - vi) God made us sinful to understand God’s sacrificial love..... 233
 - vii) God made us sinful understand his unending forgiveness.....238
 - viii) God made us sinful give us the grace to forgive our enemy..242
 - ix) God made us sinful to experience spiritual renewal.....246
 - x) God made us sinful give us Sure Foundation..... 251
 - xi) God uses our Sure Foundation for Salvation of mankind..... 256

- 23. WHO IS MY GOD?.....258

- 24. AUTHOR’S FINAL NOTE..... 259

“God’s Warning”

“Turn away from your sins and repent. Because the Kingdom of God is near!” (Mat 3:2)

“You are stained red with sin, but I will wash you as clean snow.” Although your stains are deep red, you will be as white as wool.” (Is 1:18)

“I will never reject anyone who returns to me with humbleness and repentance”(Ps 51:17)

“I will never reject you nor will I forsake you”(Heb 13:5)

“This is God’s Call for our Repentance”

QUESTION NO -1

WHAT IS SIN?

Sin is a wilful disobedience of God's Commandments by man.

God gave certain Commandments to man and said; "obey them faithfully, so that everything will go well with you." Yes, God insist that man should obey his teachings to live a good life as he said;

"Obey faithfully in everything that I have commanded you and all will go well with you and your descendants forever because you will be doing what is right and what pleases the Lord your God"(Duet 12:28).

God decreed that only in obedience to God's Commandments man will inherit good life in union with God. In union with God man will enjoy his presence, joy, peace, health and every blessing that are promised by him, thereby man will live in love and glorify God's Spirit in his body. (Is 43:7 & 1 Cor 6:19-20) Also, man will glorify God in his relation with one another, thus God's will for man; "Love one another as I have loved you," will be fulfilled. (Jh 13:34)

WHY DO WE COMMIT SIN?

God created man in his own image. (Gen 1:27) Hence man was reflecting the image of God and remained pure & holy as God himself is. In this stage man was enjoying God's Presence, God's Peace, God's joy, God's Love, God's spiritual gifts and shared God's own glory. This was God's will for man that; man should always enjoy every good things in obedience to God

But the Satan, who was thrown out from heaven by God due pride was always working against God's will. Satan was jealous about man's status and wanted to destroy him because man was enjoying every good thing that he lost in the Kingdom of God. Because Satan's nature is to steal, kill and destroy,(Jh 10:10) he lured man by giving false promise and deceived him to disobey God. Thus he made Adam and Eve to commit sin by disobeying God's Command. (Wis 1:23-24)

Sin came into the world through one man: The seed of sin was planted in human flesh by Satan when Adam and Eve were deceived and committed sin. This seed of sin (Original sin) was passed on to

their descendants, generation after generation to every human being on earth through their blood.

That is why the scriptures says; "Sin came into the world through one man and his sin brought death with it. As a result, death has spread to the whole human race because everyone has sinned. (Rom 5:12). We presently continue to commit sin because, the original sin that was planted in human flesh is a satanic bondage. This is known as "the power of sin" which abuses man and drives him to commit sin repeatedly.

This satanic bondage is an invisible chain which does not allow man to live righteous life that pleases God as we read in the book Wisdom. Here God said; 'Farmers, shepherds and labourers (refers whole human race) out in the countryside (refers to the whole world) were captured by the same inevitable fate (bondage in sin) and bound in darkness by the same invisible chain. (Satanic influence) (Wis 17:17) *To get full insight about God's commandments and obeying God's commandments, believers are advised to read the book Deuteronomy (OT) Chapters 5,9, 10, 11, & 12*

It is very clear from above, that God wants man to live happily in his presence by obeying him and doing his will. But the Satan lures man to commit sin, there by man loses the blessings promised in obedience. When man commits sin, he lives as slaves for sin. Thus, man has gone away from God to live in disobedience and lives in the bondage of sin as slaves of Satan.

IS OUR MIND KEPT IN DARKNESS?

Are we blind for the light of Christ shining on us: Satan, who always works against God's will is very cunning. He deceives people by giving false promises to commit sin and makes them as slaves of sin. Sin, once committed becomes a dark cloud over the sinner. This dark cloud will not allow his mind to see light of Christ shining on him. His mind becomes blind to recognise eternal light of the Lord shining on him as Prophet Isaiah said;

"No longer will the sun be light by the day, nor moon be light by night. I the Lord will be your eternal Light more lasting than sun and moon. The light of my Glory will shine on you" (Is 60:19)

St Paul said; (Eph 5:14) "Wake up sleeper, rise from death; Christ will shine on you", because "Jesus Christ is light of the world".

Yes, Jesus said; "I am the light of the world; whoever follows me will have the light of life and will never walk in the darkness." (Jh 8:12) Further he said; "When I am in the world I am the light of the world" (Jh 9:5) The Scripture also says that; 'sinners mind is kept in darkness'.

Yes, St Paul said; *"They (sinners) know God, but they do not give the honour that belongs to him. Instead their thoughts have become complete nonsense, and their empty minds are filled with darkness. (Rom 1:21)*

Mankind embraced such an appalling condition because; "The light (Christ) has come into the world, but people love darkness rather than light, because their deeds are evil" (John3:19) **Thus Satan lures people to commit sin, keeps their minds in darkness.** He causes children of God to live against God's will to make them slaves of sin and captives of crimes, as God said; "Do you think that I sent away my people like a man who divorces his wife? Do you think I sold you into captivity like a man who sells his children as slaves? No, you went away as captive because of your sins; you were sent away because of your crimes. (Is 50:1).

All such things have happened because; *"People's mind is kept in darkness by the evil god of this world. He keeps them from seeing light of Christ shining on them, light that comes from Good News about the glory of Christ, who is exact likeness of God."* (2 Cor 4:4)

Are we losing our freedom? God said; "No longer will the sun be the light by day nor moon will be the light by night. I the Lord will be your eternal light. The light of my glory will shine on you. Your days of grief will come to an end. I the Lord will be your eternal light more lasting than sun and moon." (Is 60:19-20) Because we are blind for the eternal light of Christ shining on us, we lose our freedom what the Lord has promised his children. Freedom is what we have. Christ has set us free. Stand then as free people. Do not allow yourselves to become slaves again. (Gal 5:1)

Yes, freedom is what God promised. He said; *"I will unite them into one nation in the land on the mountains of Israel (refers whole world) they will have one King to rule over them (i.e., Christ) and they will no longer be divided into two nations or split into two kingdoms (i.e. Kingdom of God & Kingdom of Satan). They will not defile themselves with disgusting idols any more or corrupt themselves with sin.*

"I will free them from all the ways in which they sin & betray me. I will purify them & they will be my people and I will be their God". (Ezkl 37:22-23) Further God said: As for you my brothers, you are called to be free. But do not let this freedom become an excuse for letting physical desires control you. Instead let love make you to serve one another. (Gal 5:13)

Are we captives for the evil spirits?

The Satan blinds our mind for the following truth.

'The truth is:

"If we commit sin we become slaves for sin"

"If we sin we become captives for the evil spirits".

Because people's minds are blind for truth, they are held as captives of sin (Is 50:1). Because of their blindness they are kept as prisoners of in darkness. They exchange truth about God for a lie; they worship what God has created instead of the Creator himself who is to be praised for ever. (Rom 1:21) Hence, God has given them over to shameful passions. Even women pervert natural use of their sex for unnatural acts. In the same way, men give up their natural relationship with women and burn with passion for each other.

Because those people refuse to keep in mind the true knowledge about God, he has given them over to corrupted minds. So, they do things that they should not do. They are filled with all kinds of wickedness, evil, greed, and vice; they are full of jealousy, murder, fighting, deceit and malice. They gossip and speak evil of one another; they are hateful of God, insolent, proud, and boastful; they think more ways to do evil; they disobey parents; they have no conscience, they do not keep their promises, and they show no pity or kindness to others. They know that God's law says; people who live like this deserve death. Yet, not only they continue to do these things, but they even approve of others doing them. (Rom1:26-32). This is how people have become captives of evil spirits.

"ARE WE BLIND FOR TRUTH"?

This is a very important and very interesting question. Because, today's people are highly educated living in a modern society having deep and wide knowledge in medical science, physics,

engineering, electronics, information technology and in space science & research. Their knowledge is so wide and deep that they even grow human organs in the laboratory. We all know that; development in science, physics, engineering, electronics, and information technology & space research is unbelievable and mind boggling. Then how can one say that these people's minds are blind for truth?

But we also know that the present day people are lost for God and are living in the bondage of sin. There is no morality, no ethics, no discipline, no code of conduct, no honesty, and no respect for God's Law or for Law of the State. People live for the day. They live for desires of their mind & pleasures of their body. People do whatever pleases their mind & body. To please their mind & body they do anything, even if it is against God's Law. Thus they live in sin. Their sin brings all kind of pain, sufferings upon them.

About sin God has spoken as below and warns us:

"If you sin you hurt yourself". (Sir 19:4)

"Do not bring your own death by your sinful actions". (Wis 1:12)

"Sin pays its wages death". (Rom 6:23)

"Your riches (your blessings) have rotted away and your clothes (your body) have been eaten by moths (power of sin). Your Gold and silver (life) have been covered by rust (sin). This rust (sin) will stand as witness against you and eat up your flesh like fire. (It will destroy our spiritual life and physical body)(James 5:2-3)

Yes because of sin, people are experiencing pain & suffering.

But, God gives an assurance to solve their problems. He said; If you search for truth in early morning, (Wis 6:12-18) "*you will find the truth (Christ) and truth will set you free*" from all your worldly bondage, sin, deceases, pain & sufferings. (Jh 8:32) The practical problem is; "*do people of present generation search for Christ*"?

By the way: "What is the truth"?

Whom does the Scriptures refer as truth? It refers to 'Jesus Christ' as truth for Jesus said;

"I am the way, **truth** and life". (Jh 14:6) Further, he said;

"I am the light of the world; whoever follows me shall never walk in darkness" (Jh 8:12) and he told the world that,

"When I am in the world I am the light of the world." (Jh 9:5)

If Jesus Christ is the truth and light then we have all the problems resolved. Because:

Jesus Christ came to redeem the sinners. (Mat 9:12)
 Jesus never rejects any one who come to him. (Heb 13:5)
 Jesus Christ fill us with his love and peace. (Jh 11:27)
 Jesus Christ gives rest form all our problems. (Math 11:28)
 Jesus Christ heals the broken hearts. (Ps 147:3)
 Jesus took our sins upon himself on the cross. (1Pet 2:24)
 Jesus heals our wounds, hurts and sickness. (Ezkl 34:16)
 Jesus Christ forgives our sins. (Luk 5:20)
 Jesus Counsels us in our distress. (Is 9:6)
 Jesus Christ comes to us as light in our darkness. (Jh 8:12)
 Jesus Christ's words brings life in to our body. (Jh 6:63)
 Jesus Christ delivers us from all our bondage. (Is 51:6-7)
 Jesus fills us with his grace to strengthen us. (2 Cor 12:9)
 Jesus gives us authority to over on evil spirits. (Mk 16:17))
 Jesus gives us Ministry to preach his living words. (1 Pet 2:9)
 Jesus Christ gives us life in all its fullness. (Jh 10:10)
 Jesus Christ gives us eternal life. (Jh 11:25)

Christ's love consumes all our pain and sufferings because he loves us with an everlasting love. (Jer 31:3) Which means, whatever may be your sins, pain, sufferings, disease and problems, Jesus Christ says; when you come to me I will never reject you because of your sins. (Heb 13:5) But, I will gather you with compassion, (Is 54:7) and I will give peace & joy to your troubled hear & mind and rest to your body & soul. He said; "I myself will be the shepherd of my sheep and I will find them a place to rest". (Ezkl 34:15)

Are you still blind for this truth? Speak to Jesus who is the truth, about your blindness, to open your eyes for faith (Luk 24:31) and to open your mind for Scriptures. (Luk 24:40-46)

IS OUR APPROACH TO SOLVE THE PROBLEM CORRECT?

When people go through distress in sickness, in finance, in occupation, in relations, in family life and spiritual life the Satan diverts their minds to find peace, joy and rest through worldly sinful means, which are against teachings of Christ. For e.g: People think that, by drinking they will find peace, or, by having drugs they can forget their past and enjoy rest in mind, or, by having an extra marital affair they think they can find peace, rest, joy and comfort which they could not find within their family. They least realise that

all these are devil's trap for luring believers to make them an addict over a period of time. Also they do not understand that they will become a prisoner of those habits or relations which will ruin their happiness, their finances, their body and their family.

Are we trusting in God's plan for us? It does not end here. People are anxious to know their future, because they are not happy and contented with their possessions and blessings what God has given them. They become greedy for more worldly wealth because they are jealous about their neighbour's wellbeing and prosperity. People want to be financially better off than others because they want to fulfil all their unreasonable ambitions and desires. People do not trust in God's plan and his providence for them. The scripture says; "wealth and prosperity comes from the hands of God". (Jer 27:5) And God gives wealth and propriety according to his plan. (Jer 29:11) But, people's ambitions/desires/jealousy drive them away from the living God to consult fortune tellers, astrologers, spirits of the dead, and mediums. Out of jealousy they even go to tantric and do puja, black magic to cause fall of their neighbours, business rivals, even their own family members.

They even go to the extent of eliminating/killing their business partners, relatives and even their most loved ones including their life partner, siblings and parents, so that they can possess all the wealth. Their greed for wealth, money, and power drives them to do extreme things that a normal human being can't think. Finally they land up in misery and lose everything. They lose respect, reputation, wealth, joy, peace, sound mind to think positively. Most importantly they lose their greatest wealth which is freedom in mind and their health.

Trust in God's plan, not on your understanding: People behave in this manner because they do not rely on the prosperity that God has promised them by saying; "*I alone know the plans I have for you. The plans to bring prosperity and not disaster, plans to bring about the good future you hope for*" (Jer 29:11). Further, God says; 'wealth comes from his hand. He gives wealth to the one whom he chooses'. **Yes, our God says;**

"By my great power and strength I created this world and all living beings in it; and I give it to any one whom I choose."(Jer 27:5) *Dear believer, are you the one chosen by God to possess worldly wealth? If you are chosen by God to possess worldly wealth, you will receive that wealth at any cost at the time God chooses to give it to you.*

Because; "God doesn't change his mind about a person whom he chooses and blesses". (Rom 11:29)

If you are not the person chosen by God to possess wealth which you desire, it is a waste of time and effort to desire for wealth and to struggle for it. If you are filled with desires, greed and are driven about with passion to possess wealth by any means, such desires come from the evil one to destroy you and your family for the Satan comes to destroy you.

Jesus explains that; this desire to possess more wealth is the influence of evil. He said; "The thief come in order to steal, kill and destroy."(Jh 10:10) Yes, the Satan comes through this desire to steal your peace and joy, use your hand to kill/plunder other's life. Finally he will destroy your physical life, spiritual life and your family. That's why Jesus warns us four times by cautioning; "be on guard so that you may not be deceived by any one". (Mark 13:5, 9, 23 & 34). Because, the devil is roaming like a lion to devour God's chosen children (1 Pet 5:8). So be sure that you trust in God's plan for you, rather to look at this sinful world and yearn for possessing wealth. It will only destroy your physical life and eternal life.

We become slaves, prisoners and captives: When children of God are introduced to such practices like consulting fortune tellers, astrologers, spirits of the dead, mediums, consulting tantric to do puja & black magic to cause down fall of their neighbours, business rivals, even their own family members, without knowing that these are satanic bondages, they will become slaves to such satanic bondage. This bondage makes them dependent on such practices for living rather than to depend on the promises of God. Thus they became slaves of sin, captives of crimes and prisoners of darkness.

For example:

A person who depends on astrology, horoscope, zodiac signs, palmistry, trusting in auspicious moments such as full moon day & new moon day, tracking movements of planets and stars to do any good deed, such as; fixing marriage, commencing construction of house, starting a business, or commencing journey, observing vastu while construction of house etc., will be habituated to depend on such superstitious belief for everything he does. His actions are not based on faith and on the promises of living God. Thus he commits sin against his own faith as God said " any action not based on faith is sin".(Rom 14:22-23) Also he commits sin against first & second

commandments of Ten Commandments in which God said "do not worship or depend on anything that are created by me for your life and wellbeing. (Ex 20:1-5)

A person who consults spirits of dead, medium, tantric to know about his future will never be satisfied. He commits sin against God in such actions. (Is 8:16-20) He will never be able to trust in God's Word & in God's plan for him. (Jer 29:11)

A person who is habituated to do witchcraft, magic to destroy others, will never be able experience peace, love and the presence of God in his life. He will be always experience distress in his personal life, his mind will never experience peace and his soul will never find rest that the Lord has promised. He will be lost for the Kingdom of God. (Gal 5:19-21)

Such people become slaves of sin, captives of crimes & prisoners of darkness and go far away from the living God despising him. There-by, they became blind for light of Christ as St Paul says; "for the Gospel we preach is hidden only from those who are getting lost. They do not believe, because their minds have been kept in the dark by the evil God of this world. He keeps them from seeing the light shining on them, the light that is coming from the Good news, about the glory of Christ, who is the exact likeness of God. (2 Cor 4:3-4). This is how people turn away from the living God.

Godless people are the easy target for Satan. People of this world are blind truth. (Christ) They are blind for the light of Christ. Jesus said "while I am in the world, I am the light for the world". (John 9:5) People do not get time to know their God, his words, his power, his grace, his promises and truth because, the Satan keeps them busy in all kinds of worldly attractions. He keeps them engaged in extended working hours, education/research, worldly affairs, entertainments, competition in every area of life, social commitments, holiday tours, merry making, and every other things that people are interested and people are worried about.

Present day people are always busy in earning more and more money to meet their ever increasing needs and desires of this attractive world. Whatever free time they get, they are busy entertaining themselves by gossiping, chatting on social media, browsing the internet, movies, pleasure trips, partying etc.. They have no time for their God. Because of these worldly activities and attractions they have no interest to know their God, his ways, his

teachings and his promises. The author does not condemn that entertainments are sinful. After a long day of hard work people need to relax, must entertain themselves and socialise. But people get engrossed or lost in such activities in available free time instead of using free time for meeting their spiritual needs by reading Scriptures to know more about the Kingdom of God and by working in the field of salvation. There are many ways in which we can indulge in spiritual activities for enrichment of our soul and to work for the Church in order to bring more people to the saving knowledge of Christ.

Because people do not know what God has spoken about them,(their call) his promises for them,(about his plan for them) his love for them, (his words) they are blind for spiritual gift and spirituals power that God has reserved for them. ***This is the reason why God said, "Watch out and be careful, for Satan is roaming like a lion waiting to deceive the children of God and make them fall"***. (1 Pet 5:8)

People who are careless about their eternal life and people who do not have thirst for knowing truth (Christ) are the one who are lured easily by the Satan. They fall in trap laid by Satan and commit sin. Still if they do not have reverence for God's call which says; "Turn away from your sins, because the Kingdom of God is near" (Mat 3:2) and continue to live in sin, then, they become slaves of sin, captives of crimes and prisoners of evil bondages. This is how people yield themselves for sin.

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO- 2

HOW DOES SIN SPREAD TO CORRUPT THE WORD?

“First let us understand how sin corrupts human beings”

Before we understand how sin spreads to corrupt the world, we will understand how man falls in sin, there-by he invents his own death. This processes is explained in Twelve Stages on; “how human mind is corrupted by the power of sin, there by human beings are enslaved by Satan and become refugees & captives”.(Ezkl 12:11-12)

Human being are lured by Satan through false promises. These false promises tempt them. The attractions in sin makes them to forget God’s Laws and teachings of Scriptures. Human beings forget the most sacred commandments which Jesus gave us, which are: “Love the Lord your God with your all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind. And Love you neighbour as you love thy self”.(Mat 22:37-40)

When human beings forget these commandments, they become selfish, conceited, deceitful, greedy, arrogant, envy, and revengeful. These sinful attributes encourages them to dare to commit sin, & sin repeatedly in spite of knowing that they displease God in their act and that the wrath of God will come upon them.

WHAT ARE THE TWELVE STAGES IN WHICH MAN FALL IN SIN AND BECOME SLAVES OF SATAN?

Stage-1. Our desires drives us to commit sin: A person is tempted when he is drawn away and trapped by his own evil desire. Then this evil desire conceives and gives birth to sin. (James 1:14-15) Thus he commits sin for the first time.It is the desires of man for worldly things which drives him to commit sin. However, if our desires are oriented to do the will of the Most High, which is to work for salvation of souls, God will give us grace to reject these worldly desires by transforming us inwardly (Rom 12:1-2) and by circumcising our heart.(Col 2:11) Such attitude will help us to escape the fire of this world. This fire is the sins of the world which is burning separate man from God and destroy human race.

Stage -2. Sin separates us from God: Sin, once committed by a person, makes him to feel guilty with-in himself and fear sets in him. This guilt and fear drive him to hide from the Lord's presence like how Adam and Eve hid from the Lord's presence after committing sin.(Gen 3:8-10 & Is 2:19-21)This is how sin separates us from God.

Stage-3. Pleasures of sin drives man to commit sin repeatedly: But the pleasures of sin which man enjoyed when he committed sin for the first time will give birth for desire to indulge in the same sin again to enjoy its pleasures.

Stage-4: Satan exploits our weakness to commit sin: This is desire to indulge again in sin is called as weakness of flesh as Jesus said; "Man's flesh is of no use at all"(Jh 6:63) Further he said; "The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."(Mat 26:41) The Satan wants to exploit this weakness in man to destroy his body and soul. The Satan uses this weakness in man to desire for more sin. **This temptation is the satanic infliction/invisible chain (Wis 17:17) which will drive him to sin again and again.**

Stage-5. Satan will give reasons to justify sin: At this juncture if man does not return to God in repentance with fasting & prayer and take help of Holy Spirit to overcome his sinful desires, Satan will take control over him and give him many reasons to justify his sins.

Stage-6: Our soul at war with flesh: Man's soul will be fighting against the body not to indulge in sin again, (1 Pet 2:11) man will justify himself with reasons which pleases him and will commit the same sin repeatedly. St Paul refers to this stage as "**Conflict in Man**" (Rom 7:14-20) which was explained earlier.

Stage-7. Man becomes habituated to this sin: When man commits the same sin second time he loses fear to commit this sin. He pacifies his disturbed conscience with his own justifications and encourages himself to commit the sin once again. There after he finds excuses to commit sin again and again. Thus he becomes habituated.

Stage-8. Man loses fear of God: When a person is habituated to commit particular sin, fear for committing sin has gone away in him because he has lost fear of God. His false courage & confidence encourages him to commit different types of sins. He ventures out to commit different types of sins. Now the power of sin takes control over him & holds him strongly because he has become a slave of sin.

Stage-9. Man's soul dies for God: When man gets habituated to commit sins and indulges in various sins, his conscience dies for righteousness. His mind has no reverence for Word of God which teaches him/cautions him not to indulge in this sin. Because his mind rejects God's words, he loses God's presence in him. Since he loses God's presence, his soul dies for God.

Stage-10. Man becomes a captive & refugee of Satan: The soul dies because it cannot rejoice in the Lord. (Phil 4:4) Our soul lives & rejoices in righteous deeds and when we obey God's word. Because, man disobey word of God the Satan binds his soul with an invisible chains. (Wis 17:17) When his soul is bound by invisible chains he becomes a captive & refugee of Satan.(Ezkl 12:11-12).

Stage -11. Man invites his own death: Since God's presence is not in him, his sins ultimately brings death in his soul. Because his soul dies for God, more and more sins will feed on him. This is what Jesus said; "Where ever there is dead body (man dead for God) vultures will gather (sins of the world will feed on him)" Luk 17:37) Sins committed by will hurt him, (Sir 19:4) and destroy his physical body like a venom of a snake and will bring death in his soul and body. (Prov 5:7-11 & James 5:2-3). That's why God said; "Do not bring your own death by your sinful actions."(Wis1:12)

Stage-12. Ungodly people have brought death on themselves: God said; "Do not bring on your own death by sinful actions. God did not invent death. When one living creature dies it gives him no pleasure. He created everything so that they may continue to exist. Everything he created is wholesome and good. There is no deadly poison in it. Death does not rule the world for God's justice does not die. **Ungodly people have brought death on themselves by things they have said and done.** They yearn for death as if it were a lover. They have gone into partnership with death. (Wis 1:12-16) **This is how man invents his own death, because;** sin when it is fully grown gives birth to death. (James 1:15) Yes my dear believers, it is we who invent our own death by what we say and what we do. Now let us see what our God says about our self-indulgence in sin.

SIN OVER A PERIOD BECOMES ACCEPTABLE WAY OF LIFE.

When people commit sin repeatedly they are habituated to sin and become slaves of sin because of their weaknesses. That's why Jesus said; "the spirit is willing but flesh weak". (Mat 26:41) The Satan is very cunning to exploit their weaknesses so as to keep them

as slaves for sin. People who are slaves for sin are not afraid of their family, or their society or God. They dare to commit sin repeatedly.

They are lost for themselves and are also lost for God. Now they want more people to accompany them in their sinful actions. So they lure their friends & relatives in the cloud of darkness (Sin), there-by more people are caught in this trap laid by Satan through them. When more & more people are lured in sin, they all live life in sinful manner which becomes an acceptable way of life in the society.

This sinful-life over a period of time becomes an acceptable way of life. Since many people have accepted this sinful-life as a way of life, the society, the public, and even the Governments accept the sinful-life as a norm of life and as part of culture. The society & public closes its eyes for the wicked ways of living. To remain in power Governments passes laws to honour this sin. This encourage people to accept it as a way of life and as part of their culture. This is how sin corrupts this world and makes people live as slaves of sin.

When Government in a country passes a law for honouring sin, ordinary people, who does not know what is truth (word of God and Laws of God), will have no hesitation to accept sinful ways as normal way of life. They will not resist or fight back to avoid such sinful ways of life. Hence they will be a part in sinful ways of living.

A few examples are given below to show how people have accepted the sin as way of their life:

1. Custom of Drinking:-The custom of drinking liquor is accepted as a symbol of status in some societies. For some people drinking is acceptable during celebrations of their religious festivals or during good occasions/functions. For some people it is acceptable as a daily routine. Some people cannot live without drinking liquor every day. It is needless to say, countless lives and families have been ruined by liquor. But the Government of many countries have not banned liquor industry. Rather it indirectly or directly encourage liquor industry because liquor trade is a major source of income for the economy. But our God says; ***"do not get drunk with wine which only will ruin you; instead be filled with Holy Spirit."*** (Eph 5:18)

2. Prostitution: It is the oldest profession on earth, accepted as a normal way of life. Many countries have honoured prostitution and have passed legislation and laws to protect flesh trade knowing all evils it spreads in the society. God's words says; ***"A prostitute has***

been the cause for ruin of many men and caused death of too many to count. If you go to her house you are on the way to the world of the dead. It is a short cut to death.(Prov 7:26-27)"You may be sure that no one who is immoral, indecent, or greedy will ever receive the kingdom of God"(Eph 5:5)

3. Swapping of Spouse: *Swapping of spouse is very common in high society people who indulge in this sin which also turns out to be orgy. This sin, this culture is prevalent in many high societies and it is accepted as normal way of living. God warns people saying; "Can anyone carry fire against your chest without burning your clothes? Can you walk on burning coal without getting your feet burnt? It is just as dangerous to sleep with another man's wife. Anyone who does it will suffer".(Prov 6:27-29)*

4. Gay / Lesbian Marriages: *God gave Adam a life partner known as Eve and blessed their relation. God said to them multiply like stars of the sky and sand of the sea. God blessed the conjugal relation between man and woman for pro-creation. In this relation man glorifies God. Because, through this conjugal relation man fulfils God's will to multiply and fill the earth with children. (Gen 1:28) God is highly pleased in the conjugal relation between man and woman because, man and woman create another human being in the image of God and thus they fulfil his will.*

But the latest sensation, attraction for present generation is; 'gay relation', where man have sexual relation with man. And lesbian relation where women have sexual relation with women. These perverted relations are spreading like forest fire. It is widely accepted all over the world. Knowing this un-natural behaviour is against God's Law, political leaders do not condemn it. But they encourage people and pass law to give them freedom and legalise their perverted relation & their marriage to gain power, position, and popularity. Now many countries have accepted gay/lesbian relations as normal way of life and have passed law to honour it. This is against the "Law of Nature" and it is against God's will for mankind. (Sir 25:1) In the Old Testament we read that God destroyed the cities Sodom and Gomorrah by pouring burning sulphur because the people of these cities indulged in this unnatural sexual act; i.e., gay and lesbian relations which is forbidden by God.(Gen 19: 1-29)

5. Pre-marital_sex and extra marital relation: This is a culture 'pre-marital_sex and extra marital relation' is widely practiced in abroad. This culture is also fast spreading in India. Premarital sex is

widely spreading among college students & senior school students. They are enticed by pornography what they see in internet and use social media to get into evil relations through dating apps, and defile themselves. Married people are no exception for this sinful relation. They also are victims for this sin and defile their 'Body' and defile the 'Sacrament of Marriage' by indulging in extramarital relations.

People think that it is just normal way of life to enjoy sex before marriage and to enjoy fun in extra marital affair after marriage. People even feel proud about such sinful relations and think that it is a status symbol to have an affair outside marriage and to have sex with their friends before marriage. God strictly warns us that sex outside marriage, including premarital sex, will lead us in the path of destruction of our body and soul.

"Be holy as your as heavenly Father is holy," (1 Pet 1:15) God speaks about being holy. He said; "Surely you know that you are the temple of living God and that God's Spirit lives in you. So if anyone destroys God's temple, God will destroy him. For God's temple is holy and you yourselves are his temple. (1Cor 3:16-17). God is warning us that we are to abstain from every sinful relations so as to remain pure in our whole being. (Body, spirit and soul) God also reiterates about the importance of marriage. He said; "Marriage is to be honoured by all; husbands and wives should be faithful to each other. God will judge who are immoral and those who commit adultery."(Heb 13:4)

So, people should be wise to learn and understand the importance that God gives to our body, rather than to be foolish enough to defile our body and lose the blessings that are attached to it. (Pl read Duet 27:20-23 to know how God condemns people who have sinful sexual relations, and Duet 28:1-13 to know how God blesses those who obey him and observe purity in their relation)

6. Divorce: "Marriage is a Sacrament" blessed by God as per his eternal plan. In faith, we accept that; God in his plan has united man & woman in marriage for procreation and that husband & wife have been united for eternity. ***In marriage man & women pledge to live in love and be untied till they die.*** That's why when Pharisees and teachers of law were arguing with Jesus on the law of divorce given by Moses. But, Jesus said; "what God has united, man should not separate." (Mat 19:4-6) Jesus made it very clear that; man should not divorce his wife except for her unfaithfulness. He said; "If a man divorces his wife, for any cause other than her unfaithfulness, then he is guilty of making her commit adultery if she remarries and

the man who marries her also commits adultery. (Mat 5:31-32) But, what we practically see is; people are changing their spouse like changing dress. Divorce is widely accepted all over the world. Many Countries have passed legislation to protect the rights of people on divorce. People think that it is their birth right to change their life partner to suit their needs and desires.

But divorce is very much against God's Law. God's word says; "You ask the Lord why he no longer accepts the sacrifice you offer him. It is because he knows that you have broken your promise to the wife you married when you were young. She was your partner and you have broken your promise to her, although you promised before God that you would be faithful to her. Didn't God make you one body and one spirit with her? What was the purpose of this? It was that you should have children who are truly God's people. ***So make sure that none of you break his promise to his wife. "I hate divorce; says the Lord God of Israel. I hate it when one of you does such a cruel thing to his wife. Make sure that none of you break your promise to be faithful to your wife". (Malachi 2: 13-16)***

7. Consulting Spirits, Mediums & Fortune Tellers: This practice is widely accepted in many countries. People indulge in this practice to know what is there in stars for them in future. This practice is against teachings of Scriptures. For, God said; ***"I alone know the plans I have for you, plans to bring prosperity not disaster, and plans to bring about the future you hope for"***. (Jer 29:1)

Instead of depending on God's Plan and to wait upon him for good life, people go to tantric, black magician, consult the spirits of dead, conduct all kind of forbidden worship and offer sacrifice on pagan's altar to know their future. While practicing such forbidden worship, they even make human sacrifice on the pagan's altar. This culture is fast spreading among the educated people, big businessmen, and people of high status. It is accepted in the society as a way of life. Also people greatly depend on Zodiac signs and predictions made by astrologers and fortune tellers.

Let us understand what God says about such practices;

>> *God said; "I will make fools of fortune tellers and frustrate the predictions of the astrologers. The words of the wise I refute and show that their wisdom is foolishness". (Is 44:25)God warns that;*

>> *"All the magic spells and charms that you do can't save you from your ruins and all the predictions of the astrologers can't save you from disaster. (Is 47:11-15) (Reader is advised to read this full chapter in Bible).*

>> Further God warns that; "Do not listen to fortune tellers/astrologers or anyone who claims he can predict the future, either by dreams or by calling spirits of dead, or magic. They are deceiving you and it will cause you to be taken far away from your God". (Jer 27:9-10)

>> God again says; "People consult idols and fortune tellers, but the answers they get are lies and nonsense. Some interpret dreams but they only mislead you". (Zech 10:2)

>> God's warning for such people who depend on magic and fortune tellers is; "But people will tell you to ask for messages from fortune tellers and mediums, who chirp and mutter. They will say after all people should ask for a message from the spirits and consult dead on behalf of the living. You are to answer them; "Listen to what the LORD is teaching you. Do not listen to mediums. What they tell you will do you no good". (Is 8:19-20)

But people reject God's words. They go on their own to consult Spirits, Mediums, and Fortune Tellers. Thus they commit sin against first commandment of Ten Commandments where God "Let there be no god for you other than me" I am a jealous God. I tolerate no rivals. (Ex 20:1-5)

8. Abortion: This is what God said about every child which is conceived in the mother's womb:

>> Every child is created in the image of God. (Gen 1:27)

>> Every child is a gift from the Lord; they are the real blessing from God. (Ps 127:3)

>> Every child is precious in the eyes of God. (Is 43:3-4)

>> Even before the child is conceived in mother's womb God has known the child." (Jer 1: 4-5)

>> Every child is chosen by Christ to bear much fruit, the kind of fruit that endures. (Jh 15:16)

>> Every child is a chosen generation, the Kings priest, the holy nation, God's own Child, chosen to proclaim the wonderful acts of living God.(1 Pet 2:9)

>> Every child will be a glorious crown for the Lord. (Is 61:3)

>> Finally God said; "I alone know the plan I have for the child". (Jer 29:11)

But we people of modern and fast moving world have no regard or reverence to God's words. Our life is guided by our likes, dislikes, pleasures, and our own plan. We have no time to know what is God's plan for us and for the child, which is conceived. Also we

have no mind to wait upon the Lord to know what God's plan is. We are guided by what we see and what we hear. We do not know what God has spoken about us or what God's will for us or what is God's will for the child, which is conceived. This is the plight of modern couples who say that; the child has been conceived in the wrong time which hinders his/ her profession, or pleasures, or hinders their plan. They least understand that the child is conceived at the time chosen by God. Yes, it is God who sets time for birth and death. (Ecc 3:2)

So they consider it as an unwanted pregnancy and at any cost they want to terminate the pregnancy. Hence they abort the fetus. Thereby, they kill / abort the child and invite curse upon themselves. (Duet 31:1, 15 & 19) Aborting an unborn child is against God's will and it is a sin against 5th Commandment; 'Do not commit murder'. (Ex 20:13) But, abortion is accepted and widely practiced by people of the world as normal way of life and Governments also encourage abortion by legalising it to control population and give freedom to people to act as per their will/desires. People exercise their freedom to work against nature by destroying the fetus in the womb which is a crime against humanity and sin against God.

Against abortion God warns us saying:

>> "Do not kill innocent people (Unborn child) in the holy place (mother's womb) (Jer 22:3)

>> "The Lord is coming from the heavenly dwelling place to punish people of the earth for their sins. The murders they have secretly committed (abortion) on earth will be revealed. The ground will no longer hide those who have been killed." (Is 26:21)

>> The Lord says; "I will no longer be silent about the wickedness of Godless people; I will no longer tolerate it. They have murdered innocent people (aborted fetus) and the blood they have spilt cries out for revenge. The souls of the righteous are constantly pleading for vengeance. Let there be no doubt says the Lord. I will hear the plea of the innocent people (aborted children) who have been murdered and I will take vengeance for what they have done to them." (2 Esdras 15:7-9)

HOW MAN ABUSES NATURE?

From the above it is clearly understood how we continue to commit sin by abusing the natural gifts that are bestowed upon us by God.

- > We abuse the beautiful conjugal relation between man and women by committing adultery, prostitution, fornication, rape, and gang rape, sex with animals, pornography and orgy.
- > We abuse natural relation between man and women by indulging in gay and lesbian marriage/relation.
- > We abuse our physical body which is a gift by God and is also a temple of Holy Spirit, by smoking, drinking, consuming drugs, using all our organs in a sinful manner, self-abuse for sexual pleasures, sinful sexual relations and indecent exposures.
- > We abuse our spiritual life by worshiping demonic forces, evil spirits, indulge in occult/satanic worship, idol worship, worship animals, reptiles, heavenly bodies like sun, moon, stars etc, instead of worshiping our Creator himself. People also worship human beings who are alive and people who are dead.
- > We abuse the God's blessing by committing murder /crime against God and mankind by killing our innocent children in the mother's womb and buy murdering people for personal gains.
- > We abuse people who are placed under us by infringing their rights, freedom and keep them as our slaves for our own pleasures, personal gains by using our power and authority.

*Many of these abuses have been legalised and protected by Laws of the Government in many countries. Therefore all these sinful ways of living are considered to be normal way of living by people. **Unfortunately people are not aware about what God has spoken about their body and their relation with others.***

God said; "your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, who lives in you and who was given to you by God. You do not belong to yourself but to God. He has brought you for a price. (Blood of Christ) So use your body for God's "Glory". Hence, God wants us to glorify God's Spirit in our body and in everything we do". (I Cor 6:19-20) Hence we cannot abuse our body or our relation with others.

God says that; we continue to live in sin due to our ignorance as we read below:

- >>"My people are dying for lack of knowledge" (Hos4:6 and, Job 36:12)
- >>"My people are blind about the Truth" (Is 42:16)

>> "They have eyes but they do not see; they have ears but they are deaf" (Is 42:8 & Jh 12:40)

>> Jesus said, "Can one blind person lead the other blind person" (Mat 15:14)

>> God's words say that "the whole world is in darkness" (Jh 3:19)

>> St Paul says that; "The whole world is under the power of Sin" (Gal 3:22).

This is how sin spreads throughout the world. The whole world is corrupted without the saving knowledge of Christ and are living in the bondage of sin & slavery. Thus the Word of God as spoken by prophet Isaiah and King Solomon written below becomes true.

Word of God spoken by prophet Isaiah:

Do you think that I have sent away my people like a man who divorces his wife?

Where then are the papers of divorce?

Do you think I sold you into captivity like a man who sells his children as slaves?

No, you went away because of your sins; you were sent away because of your crimes. (Is 50:1)

Word of God spoken by King Solomon:

Farmers, shepherds and labourers out in the country (refers to all people of this world) were captured by the same inevitable fate (sin) and are bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain. (Satanic bondage)(Wis17:17)

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO: 3

WHY ARE WE SINFUL?

THE SATAN EXPLOITS OUR DESIRES & WEAKNESSES

We have understood how sin spreads through human beings and corrupts everyone on the earth. It is very important for us to understand that sin is like a seed, that once it is planted in human flesh it gets its nourishment from our desires commit to sin and our weaknesses for sin. The Satan is exploiting our desires & weaknesses to lure and make us fall in sin. Then he holds us as slaves. Yes, if we give-in for our desires / weaknesses to indulge in sin, it grows within us very powerfully. Once sin takes deep root in us, it also spreads around us to lure more people in to it as we read in the earlier chapter. That's why God said; "Sin came into the world through one man and his sin brought death with it. As a result, death spread to the whole human race because everyone has sinned". (Rom 5:12)

It is great challenge for us to exercise self-control: From the above discourse we discern that the most difficult task for us is to exercise self-control over our desires for sin. In this attractive and sinful world it is a great challenge for us to exercise self-control on our desires to commit sin and on our weaknesses to indulge in sin. We face this predicament and experience failure to exercise self-control on desires for sin because, God has made us weak in flesh as Jesus himself acknowledges that our flesh is weak for sin. (Mat 26:41)

JESUS SAID "OUR FLESH IS WEAK FOR SIN"

>> "Jesus said; "we can do nothing of our own in our flesh for **"human flesh is of no uses at all"** as far as the kingdom of God is concerned. (Jh 6:63)

>> Yes Jesus said: "I am the vine and you are the branches. Whoever remains in me and I in him will bear much fruit; **for in your flesh you can do nothing without me"** (Jh 15:5)

>> Jesus said; **"we cannot worship the Lord in our flesh because we are weak in flesh"**. "But time is coming and it is already here, when by the power of God's Spirit people will worship the Father as he really is, by offering him the true worship that he wants. God is Spirit, and only by the power of his Spirit, not by flesh, can people worship him as he really is" (Jh 4:23-24) **Yes, we cannot worship our God in our flesh.**

>>Finally, before Christ entered his passions and was crucified in the garden Gethsemane he said; **“The spirit is willing (human spirits willing), but the flesh is weak.”** (Mat 26:41)

This weakness in flesh makes us to desire for sin and drives us to indulge in sin. The Satan is using our inherent weakness for sin and holds the human race as captives and refugees for sin.

Dear believers, it is very important for us to know “why we are sinful”? The answer to this question gives birth to two questions. Which are as follows:

QUESTION-1: WHY DO WE SIN?

Invisible chains that bind us to this sinfulness: If only we know the root cause for our sinfulness, we will be able to fight against power of sin. The power of sin binds us and makes us as slaves of evil spirits. In our human nature we find excuses for our sins. We also blame others or blame the circumstances / situations as cause for our sins. *It is true that we are also influenced by people around us to commit sin. But not all sins that we commit are influenced by people around us. Many times we commit sin by yielding ourselves to sinful desires. We are driven by our inherent weaknesses to commit sin. The desire to commit sin and our weakness for sin are the invisible chains that bind us to this sinfulness.*

King Solomon said; “Farmers, shepherds and labourers out in the country (refers to all people of this world) were captured by the same inevitable fate (sin) and are bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain. (Satanic bondage)(Wis17:17) Yes, the Satan uses our desires & weakness to keep us as slaves.

QUESTION-2: WHAT MAKES US SINFUL?

It is important for us to understand the difference between ‘Desire to commit sin’ and ‘Weakness for sin.’

Desire to commit sin: Desire to commit sin means; a person’s “mind is oriented towards living a sinful life”. Because his mind is filled with evil desires, he always looks for opportunities to commit sin. Having committed sin he feels satisfied. He enjoys the pleasures of committing that sin and looks for another opportunity to commit that sin again. *(A terrorist, a serial killer, a serial rapist, a serial thief, a person who indulges in repeated adultery or repeated child abuse are some examples for people who live with desires to commit sin)*

Weakness to commit sin means: A person who was living a sinful life with many sinful habits may have now given up those sinful habits

with God's grace and with help of spiritual counselling. If he has not strengthened his inner-self against those sins and received sure foundation to be firm against those sins through fasting and prayerful life, he can be very easily lured to indulge in those sinful habit/s by his friends, relatives. For example a person may have given up the habit of drinking, or smoking or taking drugs. Now he has forgotten his old traits. But during some occasion, may be a marriage celebration, or any gatherings of friends, or a college reunion, his friends may tempt him to take liquor, or to smoke or to take drugs.

He has no desire to indulge in those sins which he has given up. Hence he will refuse to indulge in it. But over persuasion of his friends or relatives, he may give in to indulge in those sins because, he is still weak for his old memories of those sinful pleasures. This is his weakness. The Satan will use his friends and relatives to exploit his weakness by luring him to indulge in those sins which he had given up. Because he is not strong within in himself to fight against those temptations, his weaknesses will cause him to fall in those sins again.

In Gospel of Matthew 12:43-45, Jesus explained this truth as; "return of the evil spirits". St Peter said; those who have given up sin through the saving knowledge of Jesus Christ, if they return to their old way of sinful life, their condition will be much worse than before. It is like the dog which goes back to what it vomited, or a pig which has been washed goes back to role in mud. (2 Pet 2:20-22)

SINS THAT POUR FROM HEART AND

SINS THAT ENTER US THROUGH THE WORLD

Well, now let us try to understand the difference between sin that pours out of our heart and sin that we commit due to influence by others.

"SINS THAT POURS OUT FROM OUR HEART"

This explanation is based on the Word of God spoken by Jesus Christ given below:

Jesus Christ said; "It is not what goes in to a person's mouth makes him ritually unclean; rather what comes out of it makes him unclean"(Mat 15:11)

Further he said; "From man's heart comes evil ideas which lead him to kill, commit adultery, and do other immoral things to rob, lie, and slander others".(Mat 15:19)

Sin takes birth out of selfish desires: We may be surprised to know that most of the sins that we commit take birth within our heart/mind due to our selfish desires. We commit these sins because we desired for it with our conscience and our will. These are sins that we commit alone; mostly there is no second person involved in this sin to influence us. Greed, jealousy, envy, pride, lust, conceitedness, deceitful, lying are some examples for such sins. *These sins are against the teachings of Jesus Christ which are; "Love one another as I have loved you" (Jh 13:34-35) and Love your neighbour as you love thyself."(Mark 12:31) A person who is selfish, greedy, conceited, deceitful, filled with envy & pride cannot live as Christ wants him to live. Thus he commits sin against God.*

Sins that we commit alone in isolation: All most all people indulge in some sin or other in isolation. They indulge in sins such as; watching pornography, reading sinful literature that excites their imagination, sexual fantasies, sinful entertainments that excites their imagination, uncontrollable anger, lustful eyes, grudge, gluttony, laziness, filthy talk, idolatry, being too ambitious, self-abuse for sexual pleasures, unforgiving attitude, punish oneself, harbouring revenge, aversion, hateful feelings, being jealous of others wellbeing, attitude to cause division & separate people, arrogance, unfaithfulness, possessiveness, living in pride, living in sadness, obsession and idolatry. *By indulging in these sins they defile themselves in purity which is against God's words. He said; 'Be holy as your Father in heaven is holy.'"(Mat 5:48 & 1 Pet 1:15)*

These sins are very dangerous because it is only the person who live in these sins will know about it. Since others will not know about such sinfulness, there will be no one to correct them or counsel them, or advise them, to not to indulge in such sins. Over a period of time these sins will destroy their personality and character. They will become introvert, experience depression, and display sluggish behaviour. They also will become pessimistic and negative in their attitude. Such people will lose self-confidence. Their outlook about life will be grim because their sins will change their personality.

These sins shape people's life: The root cause for all these sins is "selfish attitude" which nurtures sinful nature with-in people. They compromise human values to live life based on their selfish attitude. These sins over a period of time will shape their attitude. Their attitude will be visibly seen in their lifestyle, in their speech, and in their behaviour. They will always display sadness in their face and be depressed in life. They will not be able to enjoy the Joy that comes

from the Holy Spirit and rejoice in the presence of the Lord. They cannot enjoy their food and they will always have digestion problems. Such people will prefer loneliness, and remain aloof in life.

People living with these sins need thorough counselling, regular reading of Scriptures, fasting and prayer to overcome their sinfulness. When you fast and pray you receive God's favour. (Jer 36:9) He will forgive your sins and times of spiritual strength will come from the Lord. He will send Jesus who is the Messiah who is already chosen for you. (Acts 3:19-20)

This spiritual strength will give us grace to resist temptations and reject sin in all its forms. Yes, God will make us as an Iron pillar and a Bronze wall against powers of darkness as he spoke with Jeremiah. "God said to him; today I am giving you strength to resist them; you will be like a fortified city, an iron pillar, and a bronze wall. They (temptations, weaknesses, & desires for sins) will not defeat you for I will be with you to protect you. I the Lord have spoken" (Jer 1:18-19) Once you become like a bronze wall, those temptations and sins will fight against you to make you fall, but they will not defeat you. God will be with you to protect you and keep you safe. God will rescue you from the power of sin. Your old sinful desires, weaknesses for sin & temptations will not win over you. (Jer 15:19-21)

"SINS THAT ENTERS US THROUGH THIS WORLD"

This explanation is based on Word of God given below:

God said; "Choose between life and death. If you sow in the field of natural desires, you will gather the harvest of death. If you sow in the field of the Spirit, from the Spirit you will gather the harvest of eternal life."(Gal 6:8-9)

God said; "Death (sin) has come in through the windows (our eyes, ears & mouth) and entered our palaces. (Our body) (Jer 9:21)

God said: "When you come in to the land the Lord your God is giving you, do not follow the disgusting practices of the nation that are there."(Duet 18:9)

God said; Ungodly people have brought death on themselves by the thing they have said and done. They yearn for death as if it were a lover. They have gone in to partnership with death."(Wis 1:16)

Jesus said; "I will go way, but you will die of your sins."(Jh 8:21)

We are enticed/influenced by sinful practices of people: We human beings are social beings who get very easily influenced by what we see, what we hear, what we read, what others do, others social customs, and others social practices which are sinful. We get greatly enticed/influenced and just follow what we see and hear, without realising its consequence in our life. These practices which are against the teachings of Christ, will destroy our life over a period of time because they are sinful. Let us understand the sins that we commit which are influenced by others. People yield for such sins because they are not sure about their faith in living God.

Examples for such sins are: Indulging in satanic worship, offering human sacrifice to deities, practice Occult. People also indulge in satanic healing by giving their body in satanic rituals. By indulging in all these practices, people commit sin against their faith in God. They sin against Ten Commandments where God said; "I am the Lord your God who brought you out of Egypt where you were slaves. Worship no God but me. Let there be no other god for you other than me. I am a jealous God, I tolerate no rivals."(Ex 20:1-5)

Sins people commit by seeing others: People are fascinated by seeing western culture, follow their inappropriate dress code, social behaviour such as dating, fornication, spouse swapping and orgy. Thus they indulge sexual sins. *God says avoid immorality. Any other sin that man commits does not affect his body. But a man who is guilty of sexual immorality sins against his own body. Don't you know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who lives in you and who was given to you By God? You do not belong to yourself but to God. He bought you for a price. (Blood of Jesus Christ) So use your body for God's glory" (1 Cor 6:15-20)* People learn abusive language & inhuman behaviours from others and follow the footsteps of people who are conceited, selfish, arrogant, boastful, proud, miserly. They also become one like them with all these negative attributes.

Sins people commit by what they hear:

- > People form opinions about others on the basis of what they hear from society and judge them.
- >By listening to gossip, people destroy the character and life of innocent people.
- >People bear false witness by hearing others.
- >People listen to others who practice satanic ways of healing disease and adopt them giving up faith in Scriptures.
- >People spread rumours to instigate hate feelings, racist feelings and caste feelings. They invoke religious feelings to cause divisions, religious

disharmony, and communal disharmony. People who hear such hate speech get influenced and indulge in violence, riots, kill innocent people and disturb peace.

Sins committed by seeing what others do: *This is the most popular way in which people indulge in sin in present days by seeing what others do. They are: habit of drinking, using drugs, visiting brothel, indulging in rape, gang rape, serial rape, illicit relations, child abuse, serial killing, serial theft, arson, mob violence, indiscriminate public shooting, and terrorism. People who indulge in such sins will not prevail in the Kingdom of God. (Gal 5:16-21) Such sins are committed to satisfy their sadistic pleasures. People also see others indulging in adulteration, smuggling, boot legging, flesh trade, human trafficking, bribing, robbing, online cheating, acting in porn movies/ creating child porn movies and they also indulge in such sins to earn quick money. God condemns such people and warns they will not enter kingdom of God. (1 Cor 6:9-10)*

Sins committed due to social customs. People around the world follow various customs handed down by their ancestors. These customs lead them far away from God. People follow these customs to know about their future, fortune and to live prosperous life.

> **In their custom, People do not start the day without seeing the predictions of zodiac signs.** It is a sin against the word which says "To day is holy to the Lord. (All days are holy to the Lord) So you are not to mourn and cry. Share you food with who do not have enough. Today (all days) is holy to the Lord so do not be sad. The joy that the Lord gives you will make you strong. (Nehemiah 8:9-10)

> **In their custom people give importance to special days and time to start an event, or conduct marriage, or start major work or construct buildings etc. They do no star anything without consulting an astrologer.** The Lord is highly displeased with such practice and warns that; "You are powerless in spite of the advice you get from astrologer. Let the astrologer come and save you, those people who study the stars, who map the zones of the heaven and tell you from month to month what is going to happen. They will be bits of straw and fire will burn them up. They will not be able to save themselves. The flames will be too hot for them. (Is 47:13-14)

> **In their custom, people go to tombs and consult the spirits of the dead to predict future.** (Is 65:4) God warns them. He said; "People will tell you to ask for message from fortune-tellers and medium who

chirp and mutter". They will say; "after all people should ask for messages from the spirits and consult the dead on behalf of the living." You are to tell them; "Listen to the Lord what the Lord is teaching you! Do not listen to mediums. What they tell you will do you no good" (Is 8:19-20)

>In their custom people depend on palmistry and using precious stones as sign of luck for prosperity. And they depend on vastu for prosperity when they plan a house for construction. But God says: "I alone know the plan I have for you, plan to bring prosperity not disaster. The plan to bring good future you hope for" (Jer 29:11) And God further says; "ask the lord to bless your plan. You will be successful in carrying them out"(Prov 16:3)

>In their custom people go to forbidden shrines and offer pagan's sacrifice in sacred garden and burn incense on pagan alters. And they eat food offered to idols on the pagan's alter. God warns us not to indulge in such worship and eat food that are offered to the idols. (Is 58:3-13, Is 65:37, Jer 3:12-13, 1 Cor 8:1-13, and Acts 15:20&29)

>In their custom they conduct various religious festivals and worship the things that are created instead of worshipping their Creator himself who is to be worshipped and praised for ever. (Rom 1:20-25) To such people God said; "I hate your religious festivals; I cannot stand them. When you bring grain offerings and burnt offerings I will not accept them.(Amos 5:21-23) People defile themselves by indulging in such customs which God hates. Such customs and practices leads people in to idol worship against 1st & 2nd Commandment of Ten Commandments.(Ex 20:1-5)

God warns us saying; "do not let anyone to deceive you with false arguments no matter how good they seem to be. See to it that no one enslaves you by means of worthless deceit of human wisdom which comes from the teachings handed down by men and from the ruling spirits of the universe and not from Christ".(Col 2:4 - 8)

Sins that are committed by adopting social practice.

Sins against faith practiced widely: These are sins that may have not been handed down traditionally as custom. But, they are widely practiced by certain groups of people all over the world which is accepted as a normal way of living. Following pagan's customs by wearing lucky signs/images in the body, tattooing images of living creatures & satanic symbols on body. They practice witchcraft &

indulge in black magic, worshiping heavenly bodies / living beings. These are sins against faith in God and against Ten Commandments. (Ex 20:1-5) These practices are rampant all over the world.

Sins against our own body which are widely practiced: People indulge in gay/lesbian relations, child marriage, fornication/dating, polygamy, divorce, and raising family without marriage. They also indulge in living-in relation, incest relation, spouse swapping, group sex, and adultery. These are sins which are practiced widely as social practice which entices people. *Without knowing evil effects of these sins people try it once for fun of it. Once they commit these sins, they are greatly influenced by its pleasures. Satan tempts them to do it again and again. Then people fall in their weakness. Thus they become captives & prisoners for such sins. These sins are against our own body which is the temple of the living God. (1 Cor 6:18)*

Sins practiced against the Command Love: Taking revenge generation after generation to settle family dispute is widely practiced in many countries. In this practice, fathers take a promise from their sons that they will take revenge against those families with whom he has enmity. It is sin against the commandment; "Love one another as I have loved you, (Jh 13:34) and, accept one another as Christ has accepted you."(Rom 15:7)

From the above we clearly understand that we commit sins out of selfish desires which pour out from our heart, without others influence. We also commit sins due influence of others. In either way we commit sin due to inherent weaknesses. Thus sin rules mankind due to inherent weakness for sin and keeps them as slaves. That's why man continue to remain sinful.

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO - 4

HOW DOES SIN DESTROY OUR BLESSINGS?

Jesus said; "The thief (Satan) comes in order to steal, kill and destroy. But, I have come in order that you may have life; life in all its fullness" (Jh 10:10)

Yes, the thief, the Satan comes to steal. When we sin the Satan steals the fruits of the Holy Spirits which God gave us in our Baptism when he put the mark of his ownership upon us. (Eph 4:30) The fruits of the Spirit are; love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, humility and self-control. Our living soul rejoices in the fruits of the Spirit. When the Satan steals fruits of the Holy Spirit, our soul ceases to rejoice in us. If a sinner do not repent and turn to God, over a period of time it brings spiritual death in our living soul. **Thus the Satan having stolen fruits of the Spirit, kills our soul.** Once we are lost for fruits of the Holy Spirit, it leads to spiritual death of our soul and our body becomes hiding place for evil spirits. (Jer 7:11)

Since our soul has no life in Spirit, we are spiritually dead. When our bodies dies for the Holy Spirit vultures (sins) will feed on the body as Jesus said; "Wherever there is dead body vultures will gather to feed on them" (Luk 17:37). Yes, since we are spiritually dead, every kind of sin will abide in us and take deep root. When sin lives in us, it will bring all kind of sickness to destroy our physical body which is the temple of the Holy Spirit. (1 Cor 3:17) **Through sickness the Satan will destroy our body.** Since our soul is dead spiritually & body is destroyed physically in sickness, we are bound to die in sin. Thus the Satan will destroy our physical body, bring death in our living soul, and finally destroy our eternal life. (Jh 11:5).

Dear believers, sin has power to destroy our body and all our spiritual and material blessings because the nature of sin is to bring death. (Rom 5:12) When sin enters our body, it will do what is natural to him. Sin will bring spiritual death in our soul, destroy every material blessings we have and our physical body.

That's why God said;

"Avoid sin as if it were a snake. If you go too near, it will sink its teeth in your soul like a lion and destroy you." (Sir 21:2) Yes, sin will destroy us. Now let us understand how we lose our blessings in sin.

WHAT HAPPENS WHEN WE COMMIT SIN?

First we will see how a person lives before he commits sin:

When a person remains without sin, he enjoys fruits of the Holy Spirit; love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, humility and self-control. He lives in peace without fear. Also he lives in good mental health and physical health. Yes, when a person is free from sin, he enjoys presence of God in around him and experiences Kingdom of God within him. The kingdom of God is; Love, joy and peace in the Holy Spirit. (Rom 14:17) Because he enjoys Kingdom of God within him, life is a celebration for his soul rejoices in God. Yes, our soul rejoices in the Holy Spirit. (Phil 4:4).

A person without sin celebrates life. He enjoys his relations with people around him, enjoys food & sound sleep. He enjoys everything God has given him. In all, he enjoys good feelings, because all his actions are based on Love, such as; accepting others, caring, sharing, helping, giving, forgiving, praying, loving etc. When a person acts in love, he please God because he does the will of God, for God said; 'God is Love'(1 Jh 4:16) and 'if we live life loving one another, God lives in union with us and God's love is made perfect in us. It means we will live in the presence of God.'(1 Jh 4: 12)

DO WE LOSE THE LORD'S PRESENCE BY LIVING IN SIN?

When a person commits sin, he does it against his own conscience which warns him not to indulge in that act. The soul (our conscience) which God has placed in us cannot be false to itself. Our soul always guides us in the path of light to do what is right. In other words our soul always desires to do the will of God and prompts us not to indulge in sin because an act of sin is motivated by selfish desire, which is against the act of love. An act of love is selfless in nature (sacrifice), which engulfs us with the presence of God. Christ gave his life as a sacrifice for the salvation of mankind which is an act of love. *But every act of sin is motivated by greed, conceitedness, jealousy, perversion, immorality, idolatry, sinful pleasures, power, status, pride, envy, enmity, vengeance, hatred and revenge. These acts are centred on selfish desires which brings us under cloud of darkness in which we cannot experience God's presence.*

ARE WE FOOLISH TO FOLLOW THE WORLD & COMMIT SIN?

There is a saying which goes like this that; "Do in Rome as Romans do." Which means, whatever people do, whether it is evil

or good let us be a part of it. People of this world live life by what they see, what they hear and join others in their foolish actions. Their life is guided by sinful habits/practices which God less people of this world practice. (2 Tim 3:13). *They are being guided by people who are blind for the truth. That's why Jesus said; "can one blind person lead other blind?"(Mat 15:14).* They feel happy about what they do because people of this world follow such sinful practices. Sinful life is accepted as a norm of life as we understood from pervious chapter.

But God warns us. He said; "Do not follow the majority when they go in wrong way or when they give evidence against justice". (Ex 23: 2)

Further God said; do not associate with immoral people. To avoid them we should get out of worldly ways of living completely. Do not associate with a person who calls himself a brother but is immoral or greedy or worship idols or is slanderer or a drunkard or a thief. Don't even sit down to eat with such person.(1 Cor 5:9-11) When a person commits sin, he comes under the shadow of darkness and fails to experience joy and presence of God in him, because; "he makes the Holy Spirit sad." (1 Thes 5:19) The Holy Spirit is the mark of God's ownership on him. (Eph 4:30) Further he lives against the word; "I am Holy" and you are called to live in holiness" (1 Pet 1:15)

If our life is filled with sin, we go into exile where we experience separation from God. When we repent and come back to God, confess our sins to a Priest in Roman Catholic Church, then God forgives us & sends his Holy Spirit upon us. Now we are spiritually renewed and we experience presence of God again. That's why God said; "For a brief moment I forsake you,(when we sin) but with great comparison I will gather you"(after we repent, confess and receive absolution)(Is 54:7)

IS OUR SOUL DEAD FOR GOD?

After committing sin, if a person does not repent and reconcile with God, but choses to live in pleasures of sin, he loses presence God's presence in him and becomes a captive of sin, prisoner of crime as we read in Isaiah 50:1-2. Because he fails to turn back to God in repentance, his sins will weigh upon his soul. (Wis 9:15) His sins will make him to live in darkness with guilt and fear. This guilt & fear will take him far away from Christ. Some permanently lose presence of Holy Spirit in their life because they have gone far away from God. Their soul never rejoices in the Lord, because, they choose not to repent and reconcile with God. They live with burden of their sin.

That's why Jesus said; "Come to me all of you who are laden with heavy burden. (Burden of our sins) I will give you rest". (Mat 11:28)

Sin causes spiritual death in our soul as St Paul said; "His evil desire conceives and gives birth to sin. When sin is fully grown, it gives birth to death. (Death in soul)" (Jas 1: 15) When our soul dies, we are dead for God's Spirit. Hence a sinner loses grace to respond to Word of God. When our soul is dead for Word of God, vultures (evil spirits) will feed on our body as Jesus said; "wherever there is dead body (dead soul) vultures will gather feed on them". (Luk 17:37)

What Jesus conveys through this word is; If we fail to repent for sins such as: greed, conceitedness, jealousy, perversion, immorality, idolatry, sinful pleasures, hunger for power & status, pride, envy, enmity, vengeance, hatred, revenge, sinful desires, lust, passions, sinful habits, sinful relations, they will abide in our body and compel us (or) drive us to commit more and more sins. Our sins will sink our soul in deep darkness and take us beyond the point of no return where we will be dead for God (or) lost for God.

At this juncture even if the person wants to repent and reconcile with God, he will not be able to repent, because he would have gone beyond the point of 'no-return'. By now, Satan would have taken complete control on him. This truth is explained by St Paul in his letter to Timothy. For deeper understanding on this spiritual truth believers are advised to read; 1 Tim 6: 3-10 & 2 Tim 3:1-7.

We can revive our dead soul and body: *It is very clear that; if we continue to live in sin, our body and soul will be dead for God. St Paul said; "In the past we were spiritually dead because of our disobedience & sin. (Eph 2:1-2) Believers are advised to read Ephesians Chap-2 to understand how our soul comes back to life from death. Here God warns us saying; if we want to live in union with God, we have to put an end to all sinful desires, because "If we live according to our human nature, we are going to die. But, if by Spirit we put to end all our sinful actions, we will live."* (Rom 8:13)

However worst sinner one may be, God offers life to him. He said; "Sin pays its wage death, but God's free gift is eternal life (in repentance) in union with Christ Jesus our Lord." (Rom 6:23) ***God offers "life in all its fullness" (Jh 10:10) to everyone who are alive on earth however great sinner one may be. Because, "Christ is the Lord of living not the dead" (Mat 22:32)***

To put in simple words; when we commit sin, we lose joy and peace in soul. Hence our soul is dead for God. Our sins will bring all kind of sickness in our body as St Paul said in James 5:2-3. Yes, sin brings death in body. Our organs die, glands do not secrete enzyme sufficiently causing sickness such as diabetes, thyroid, blood pressure, heart & kidney ailment, intestine disorder and other related ailments. Sin makes our organs to fail which finally leads to death. **But when people repent for sin and turn back to God**, in his mercy, God restores them to health by forgiving them. This is how we witness many physical & spiritual healings in retreat centres. When people hear Word of God 'it acts like fire and hammer' and breaks their stubborn heart. (Jer 23:29) The Spirit of God leads them in true repentance. (Wis 12:1) In repentance, God forgives them and restores them to health.

We understand this spiritual truth that; our sins bring sickness in our body & soul from the ministry of Jesus. When he healed a paralysed man who was lowered from roof top, he said to the sick man; "your sins are forgiven". The paralysed man was restored to health and he went home walking. (Luke 5:17-25) Also we read that Jesus healed a man who was lying next to the lake Bethesda for thirty eight years. After healing him Jesus said to him; "**do not sin any more or much worse thing will happen to you**". (Jh 5:1-14)

Christ performed these healing by forgiving sins of sick men. Through these healings Jesus told us that it is our sins that make us sick. Yes, our sins will bind our body, bring sickness in us to destroy our physical body. So let us put an end to our sins and be united with God and live, rather than to live in sin and be dead for God's Spirit.

WHAT DOES GOD SAY ABOUT SIN?

About sin God said the following:

- 1) Because of one man's (Adam) disobedience the whole human race came under the power of sin (Rom 5:12) God acknowledges that; mankind had fallen due to one man's sin. (Rom 5:19)
- 2) Because of sins and crimes people have become prisoners & captives and live in darkness. (Is 50:1 & Jh 3:19)
- 3) Because people are captives for sins, their eyes are blind for faith, (Luk 24:30-31) and their mind is not opened for Scriptures. (Luk 24:42-44) Hence their empty mind is kept in darkness by the evil god of this world. (Rom 1: 21)

4) *Everyone in this world, i.e., "Farmers, shepherds and labourers out in the country (all over the world) were captured by the same inevitable fate (sin) and are bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain. (Satanic bondage)(Wis17:17)*

5) *The whole world is under the power of sin. (Gal 3:22) Because we live in sin, we become slaves of ruling spirits of the universe (Gal 4:3) People stumble over God, in their sinfulness (Is 8:14)*

6) *God said; when we conceive evil desires, it gives birth to sin. When sin is full grown it gives birth to death, (James 1:15) and wherever there is dead body vultures gather. (Mat 24:28)*

7) *When sin lives in our body, it causes spiritual death in our soul.(James 1:14-15) Our sins will stand as witness against us and eat up our flesh like fire .(James 5:1-6) .*

8) *There is a strict warning from the Lord to avoid sin in all its forms. God said; "if you sin, you are hurting yourself" (Sir19:4) Further he said; "Do not blame God for your sins. The Lord does not cause what he hates. God does not accomplish anything through sinners. The Lord hates sin in all its forms, and those who fear the Lord find nothing attractive in sin". (Sir 15:12-13)*

9) If you sin, you will be sick and groaning in your death bed. (Prov5:7-14) *Believers are advised to read Proverbs Chapters 3, 4, 5, 6 & 7 to know God's warning about sin and to understand the spiritual truth on; "how sin brings sickness and death in our body?"*

WHAT DID GOD SAY ABOUT SINNERS?

God said: I have come for the sake of sinners. Jesus Christ said; "I have come for the sake of sinners, to save their soul from eternal damnation".(Mat 9:12-13) The words of Christ reveals the love that God continues to show to mankind irrespective their wickedness. He sent his only Son Jesus so that everyone who believes in him may not perish but have eternal life. (Jh 3:16)

God said: "Sinners reject me because of their evil ways". God sent his only Son, Jesus Christ, who is the light of the world. (Jh 8:12) And Jesus said; "I am the Way, Truth and Life" (Jh 14:16) Yes, Jesus came to show us the path of Salvation. But people of this world chose to live in darkness. *Yes, Jesus said; "the light has come into this world but people love darkness rather than light; because, their*

deeds are evil. Anyone who does evil things hates light; because, he does not want his evil thing to show up". (Jh 3:19-20) Further, God said; "Because of their evil and sinful ways, people are captives of sin and slaves of crimes" as we read in the book Isaiah where he said; "You went away as captive because of your sins, and you were sent away because of your crimes".(Is 50:1)

God said: "Do not blame me for your sins". God said: "Do not blame the Lord for your sins; for the Lord does not cause what he hates. He does not need the help of sinners to accomplish his purposes. He hates evil in all forms. Those who fear the Lord will find nothing attractive sin. (Sir 15:11-13)

God warned sinners and said: "Things that make people fall in sin are bound to happen. But how terrible for those who make them happen. It would better for them if a large mile stone is tied to their neck and thrown in sea than for him to cause one of those little one to fall" (Luk 17:1-2)

God said; I offer rest to sinners. *Everyone has fallen short of God's glory because of sin. (Rom 3:23) But God's offer for mercy and free gift of life is always available to those who repent. (Rom 6:23) For God said: "I myself will be Shepherd of my sheep and I will find them a place to rest. I will look for those that are lost, bring back those that wandered off, bondage those that are hurt, and heal those that are sick". (Ezkl 34:15-16) **Jesus Christ said; "Come to me all you who are heavily burdened by the weight of your sins. (Wis 9:15) I will give you rest."** (Mat 11:28) This is how Jesus, the Shepherd of our soul (1 Pet 2:25) offers rest to sinners.*

God said to sinners: "Come back to me with true repentance." Here God said; sinners are heavily burdened in their soul by the weight of their sins, as we read in Wisdom 9:15 that; "our sins weighs upon soul". This sin has taken us far away from God and made us captives and refugees. (Is 50:1-2 & Ezkl 12:11-12) Our sins have become a big barrier between us and God. Hence God does not answer our prayers. (Is 59:1-2)

God said; 'instead of committing more sins and remain as captives of crimes /slaves of sins, reconcile with me in true repentance by giving up sin for ever. You will gain Kingdom of God. If you obey, my favour will shine on you like a morning sun and bring healing. You will run like a calf let out of stall and you will regain all the joy & peace that you have lost. (Mal 4:2). **In total repentance Jesus offers 'life in all its fullness'. (Jh 10:10)**

God said; "I will accept you as you are": God gives us an assurance that; when we give-up sinfulness in true repentance, we will regain all that we have lost due to sin as we understand from the parable: 'The Prodigal Son'. When he came to his senses he realised his sins. With repentant heart he returned to his Father with an intention to remain as a servant in his house. His Father accepted him as he was, with all his shortcomings. He did not rebuke his son nor did he ask a single question. His Father returned everything his son lost due to his disobedience and sin. (Luk 15:11–30)

God said: I will repay twice of what you have lost: Sin has been the cause for all destruction because Jesus said; "the thief (Satan) comes in order to steal, kill and destroy." (Jh10:10) In sin, we lose our blessings, as God has spoken in the books Deuteronomy 28:15-68 and Leviticus 26:14-46. Believers are advised to read these passages for deep understanding on how we lose God's blessings due to our sins. When we truly repent for our sins and turn back to the Lord with fasting and prayer, with a firm decision, determination, and conviction not to sin again, then our Lord gives us a promise that he will return everything in double measure that we have lost due to our sins. *He said; "Return, you exiles (sinners) who now have hope. Return to the place of safety. I tell you now; "I will repay twice over with blessing for all you have suffered". (Zech 9:12)*

Further God said; "I will give you back what you have lost in years when swarms of locust ate your crops. It was I who sent this army against you. Now you will have plenty to eat, and be satisfied. You will praise the Lord your God who has done this wonderful thing for you. (Joel 2:25-26) *Your shame and disgrace will be ended. You will live in your own land. And your wealth will be doubled; Your Joy will last forever.* (Is 61:7) This how God will restore everything what we have lost in our life due to our sins.

God warned us and said: "There is no safety for sinners".

In the Scriptures God makes open offer to sinners and said:

>> *"Return to me and I will return to you" (Zech 1:3)*

>> *"Turn back to me and I will turn back to you" (Mal 3:7)*

>> *"Come near to me and I will come near to you." (James 4:8)*

This is a call for each and every one of us who live in sin. Because, we are living in the period of God's Grace, for God said; "wherever sin increased my Grace also increased much more". (Rom 5:20). This is a call for repentance which is an open offer, available

to each and every one of us till the last breath of our life. If we are alive for this call, respond positively and return to him sincerely, God will accept us as we are like the prodigal as we read earlier.

Yes, our God waits for us to return with repentance for he said; *"All day long I held out my open arms waiting for my disobedient & rebellious people".(Rom 10:21) God waits for us with open arms out of his everlasting love (Jer 31:3) because, he knows that "there is no safety for sinners."(Is 48:22) And God does not want that our soul should perish in hell due to sin. But, in him we find refuge. (Ps 57:1 & 91:1-2)*

God said; I want to use you as my instrument:

The burden of announcing the Good News to the world rest on every believer. Yes, the call to do the work in salvation is given to all believers on earth. Because Jesus said; "the harvest is plenty; but gardeners are few."(Mat 9:38) Further God said; "you are the chosen generation, the Kings priests, the holy nations, and God's own people, called to proclaim wonderful acts of the living God, who called you out of darkness into his marvellous light. At one time you were not God's people, but now you are his people; at one time you did not know God's mercy, now you have received his mercy".(1 Pet 2:9)

God who has spoken about life in God's service said; *"If anyone makes himself clean from all those evil things, he will be used for special purposes, because he is dedicated and useful the master and ready to be used for good deeds". (2 Tim2:21) Here God calls every one of us, we who are sinners, to turn away from sin with true repentance and purify ourselves (Joshua 3:5) by completely surrendering our life, so that he will anoint us and use us as his servants to spread the Gospel to the ends of the earth.*

Finally, God said; "I want to share my glory with sinners". God who has chosen us in eternity to bear much fruits that would endure, (Jh 15:16) said; "I have called you by name, you are mine. (Is 43:1) "I will give-up the whole nations to save your life because you are precious in my eyes". (Is 43:4) Yes, because we are precious to him, he wants that we should remain free of sins, so that he can share his own glory with his us, as we read below:

>> All of us then (when we set our self-free of from Sin) reflect the glory of the Lord with uncovered faces and that same glory coming from the Lord, who is Spirit, transforms us into his likeness in an ever greater degree of glory."(2 Cor 3:18)

>> Christ will change our weak mortal bodies and make them like his own glorious body, using the power by which he is able to bring all things under his rule. (Phil 3:21)

>> Those who God has set apart, he called and those he called, he put right with himself and he shared his glory with them. (Rom 8:30)

>> Finally God said: In the last days, "I will pour out my Spirit on everyone. Your sons and daughters will proclaim my message, your young man will see vision and your old man will have dreams". Here the last days refers to the last day of our sinful life. It is the day on which we repent and reject evil and surrender our heart, mind, soul and body completely for the Lord's service. (Acts 2:17) **This is how the Lord will share his glory with us, we who are sinners!**

Yes, believers, God created us with a specific purpose: *The purpose is;* "during this earthly life we should live without sin and glorify God's Spirit in our body and share his glory". This is God's will for us, which he spoke through prophet Jeremiah. He said; "I alone know the plan I have for you (plan to share his glory with us), plans to bring you prosperity and not disaster, plans to bring about the future you hope for. (Jer 29:11) God continues to speak about his plan to share his glory with us through St Paul. He said; "God's plan is to make known his secret to his people, this rich glorious secret which he has for all his people. And the secret is that "Christ is in you", which means that you will share in the Glory of God" (Col 1:27). **God speaks about 'his will' that;** we have been created to share his glory as we read in Eph 1:4. He said; "Even before the world was made, God has already chosen us to be his through our union with Christ, so that he can share his Glory with his children".

"WHAT IS GOD'S FINAL WARNING TO SINNERS?"

God warned sinners and said: "Remove the old yeast of sin from your body and remain pure, for the sure foundation the Lord has laid can't be shaken." (1 Cor 5:6-8) Whoever says that he belong to the Lord should turn away from sin." (2 Tim 2:19) Because, I am the living God, I do not enjoy seeing a sinner die. I would rather enjoy seeing him stop sinning and live. (Ez1 33:11) Sins will hurt you. (Sir 19:4) Sin will destroy your life and your soul. (Jh 10:10) And, "it is your fellow man who suffer because of your sins". (Job 35:8) **God warned us and said; change the ways you live, by giving up all your evil doings.** Because, my temple (your body) is not a hiding place of robbers. (Evil spirits) (Jer 7:11) My temple is holy. You yourself are

my Temple where I live. (1 Cor 3:16) You do not belong to yourself but to God. I bought you for a price, which is blood of Jesus Christ. So use your body for God's glory."(1 Cor 6:19-20)

HOW TO AVOID SIN AND STAY ALIVE FOR GOD?

God said; "when we commit sin we hurt ourselves". (Sir 19:4) *By committing sin we subject ourselves in the darkness, losing the presence of God. There-by we experience awful state of mind, such as: no peace, no joy, no rest, no comfort, and no hope, full of fears, anxiety, pain, suffering, and frustration, filled with doubts. This situation leads to loss of hope and faith. This is a clear indication that we are dead for God's presence or our soul is dead for God. Hence we feel heaviness in our heart which is the burden of sin. (Wis 9:15) At this stage if we do not repent and turn to the Lord we become slaves of sin and captives of crimes as God said;*

"Do you think I sent my people away like a man who divorced his wife? Where then are the papers of divorce?"

"Do you think I sold you into captivity like a man who sells his children as slaves? No. You went away as captives because of your sins. You went away because of your crimes". (Is 50:1)

Is this the end of our spiritual life on earth that we live in separation from our God until we die? No. Never. God did not create us to live in darkness and fear as slaves of evil spirits. He has promised to give us "life in all its fullness" (Jh 10:10) through Jesus Christ who offers forgiveness (Rom 8:33-35) and Salvation. (Jh 11:25 & Acts 4:12) So let us go through the questions and answers in his book to know and understand "how God leads us out from this darkness"?

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO-5

IS THE POWER OF SIN FEEDING ON OUR BODY?

We chose to use our freedom to indulge in sin: From the answers to questions in Chapter 3 & 4 we understood; how sin destroys our spiritual blessings, material blessings, our body and finally our soul? In Chapter 4 we also learnt about; what God said about sin and sinners? Now we are wise to understand that when we indulge in sin we expose our body and soul to evil spirits. These evil spirits which enter our body and soul is the power of sin. This power of sin binds our body & soul with invisible chains and brings spiritual death in soul. Our soul loses its freedom to rejoice in the Lord because sin has filled us with fear and guilt. Thus we lose the privilege of being of God's free children. (Baruch 4:3) But the Scriptures says that: *"Freedom is what we have, Christ has set us free! Stand then as free people, do not allow yourself to become slaves again. (Gal 5:1) But if we chose to use this freedom to indulge in sin, then we embrace spiritual death in our soul.*

We will experience permanent separation from God: If we continue to live in sin without true repentance, and reconcile with God through the Sacrament of Confession, we allow the power sin to take root in us powerfully and the Satan will take full control over our mind to abuse our body against teachings of Scriptures. This will cause us to lose the presence of God in our soul. Our soul will be dead for God. To such person Jesus said; "wherever there is dead body vultures will gather to feed on him". (Luke 17:37) *Yes, when our soul is dead for God, the power of sin will sink us deep in us and abuse our body. There-by instead of glorifying the Spirit of God in our body we will be abusing our body and glorify devil in us. Thus we will experience permanent separation from God.*

God spoke through St Paul and said: *"Don't you know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, who lives in you and who was given to you by God? You do not belong to yourself but to God. He bought you for a price. So use your body for the Glory of God". (I Cor 6: 19-20) This is God's will for man!*

We compromise with sin because of our weaknesses: In life, we compromise with sin because of our lifestyle, certain situations, and our weaknesses. Then we console ourselves that it is God's will that such an incident should happen which has led us to live in sin.

Thus we blame God for our sins and pacify our troubled conscience by saying; 'God knows my situation' & 'God understands me'. We turn blind eyes to our sinful life and become disobedient in our mind and our heart become like a stone. (Ezkl 11:19-20 & 36:26-28) But our soul is disturbed when we commit sin because the soul which God placed in us (Wis 15:11) rejects sin and fights against our body. It warns us not to indulge in sin as St Peter said; "Do not give in for bodily passions, which are always at war with the soul." (1Pet 2:11)

People become sick of sinning: Sin may bring momentary pleasure in us and give a transit happiness. But over a period of time this momentary happiness transforms in to depression. When people repeatedly indulge in sin, it makes them to feel sick of their sinful actions. Because our soul does not rejoice in sin but rejects sin. Yes, our soul rejects sin because, our soul rejoices only in God's Spirit and good virtues, which are the fruits of the Holy Spirit. Yes, our soul gets nourished by the Spirit of God. In our fight against power of sin, we cannot win unless we are filled with God's grace to resist sin till the end. But people of modern age compromise with sin to fulfil the desires of their heart and to enjoy the pleasures of sin in body.

God's warning to his children: He said; *"Do not blame to Lord for your Sin. The Lord does not cause what he hates. Do not claim that he has mislead you. He does not need the help of sinners to accomplish his purpose. The Lord hates evil in all forms. And those who fear the Lord find nothing attractive in evil".* (Sir 15:11-13) *If you are going to live according to your human nature you are going to die. But by the Spirit you put to death your sinful actions you will live. Those who are led by God's Spirit are God's son, for the Spirit that God has given you does not make you slave.* (Rom 8:13-15)

WHAT IS GOD'S WILL FOR US? (Purpose of our existence)

God warns us that we should be free from all sins and remain holy in everything we do, because the one who called us is holy". Yes, the Lord told to Mosses to say to the community of Israel. "Be holy, because I, the Lord your God, am holy." (Lev 19:1-2) Again the Lord spoke through St Peter and said; "Be holy in all that you do, just as God who called you is holy. The Scripture says; "Be holy because I am holy." (1 Pet 1:15-16)

God who called us said; "I have called you by name. You are mine. (Is 43:1) You are precious in my eyes. (IS 43:4) You are my own

people, and I created you to bring me glory". (Is 43:7) Yes, we are to glorify the Lord by observing holiness in everything we do. When we observe holiness in our whole being i.e., in our body, spirit and in soul, then God shares his glory with us as we read below:

>> All of us then (when we set our self-free of from sin) reflect the glory of the Lord with uncovered faces and that same glory coming from the Lord, who is Spirit, transforms us into his likeness in an ever greater degree of glory."(2 Cor 3:18)

>> Christ will change our weak mortal bodies and make them like his own glorious body, using the power by which he is able to bring all things under his rule. (Phil 3:21)

>> Those who God has set apart, he called & those he called, he put right with himself and shared his glory with them. (Rom 8:30)

>> God's plan is to make know his secret to his people, this rich and glorious secret which he has for all people. And the secret is that Christ is in you, which means that you will share in the glory of God."(Col 1:27) **This is the purpose of creation, the purpose of our existence on earth.**

WHAT IS THE POWER OF SIN?

Now having understood the purpose of our existence, it is time for us to know how to remain free of sin so that we regain the lost paradise, preserve our glorious privilege of being God's holy people,(Baruch 4:2-4) and Glorify God's Spirit in our body and share God's glory as we read above.

Are we subconsciously fighting against the power of sin? Dear believers, even if you live a righteous life, and have kept yourself free from sins of this world, the most challenging task in this sinful world these days is; "to protect oneself freedom from sin and its attractions". i.e., not to get lured by temptations and fall in sin again. Because our enemy, the Satan is roaming around the world like a roaring lion to devour the children of God.(1 Pet 5:8)

In his plan, the Satan has designed everything in this world to deceive children of God by flashing sin in everything what we see and in everything what people do. In the earlier Question;" How sin spreads to corrupt the world" deliberated in Chapter-2, we understood that sin has become "a norm of life" or "a way of life", and Governments in many Countries have passed legislations to honour sin. Hence, common people who is not aware of Scriptures

*will accept the sinful ways of living as though it is acceptable to God. This being hard truth, even people who are aware of teachings of Scriptures also become weak for temptations to follow people of the world and accept sinful life and live by it. **This is the power of sin.***

Yes, we see that sin is flashed all over the world through every source of communication which are TV, Computer, mobile phone, movie halls, clubs, radio, internet, magazine, books, social media and through every other communication facilities. Similarly, sin is portrayed in everything that people do, such as; flesh trade, bribery, injustice, denial of justice to the meek, riots, terrorism, abortion, rape, gang rape, murder, serial killing, orgy, occult, pagan worship etc. There is no end to this list. *The modern society is such, if you do not indulge in sin, the society will look at you as an outcast and unfit to be regarded as a respectable member in the society.*

>> For example; in the club of drinkers, or smokers or womanizer or gays/lesbians or in underworld operations etc., if a person who is already a member in such a club, having known Jesus Christ tries to give up doing evil to live a righteous life, he will be looked down upon, spoken ill about. He will be made an outcast from that society.

>> In a group of people who are accustomed to take bribe to do their lawful duty for which they receive salary from the Government, if a person having touched by Jesus abstains from taking bribe, he will be looked down upon. He will be made an outcast in that group.

>> We all know that if a person who is in a group of people involved in underworld operations such as smuggling, drug peddling, flesh trade, terror groups etc., tries to quit the group having touched by Jesus to live righteous life, he will be killed by his fellow members because of fear that he would divulge secrets about the group.

We understand from above that a person who is a member in any of the group decides to quit his sinful ways of life out of fear of God, he will not be able to quit. Because, either he fears that he will be rejected in society & made as an outcast, (or) he fears that he will be killed by his colleagues, due to fear that he may divulge secrets of the organisation. In either way the person who fears God is not able to renounce his sinful living. This is the power of sin.

At this juncture you may introspect on your sinful life, sinful habits, sinful relations and other sinful ways that you are living in. Also reflect on the efforts you have taken to quit the sinful ways and

*how successful you were? A sincere effort to introspect your sinful ways of life and efforts made by you to renounce it will give an understanding on the power of sin operating in you. Very few people who dare the consequences of their action to quit the organisation to give up sinful life. But if they dare to take decision to quit, the Holy Spirit will give him the courage and all the help needed. If you decide with determination, confidence and conviction to quit sinful life then God is there in your decision. "Because the decision you take comes from the Lord himself". (Duet 1:27) **And help will come from the Lord who assures that; "You will win victory not by military might or by your strength, but by my Spirit. Obstacles as great as mountains will disappear before you."**(Zech 4:6-7)*

ARE WE UNDER BONDAGE?

From the above we discern that the power of sin in us is so that it will not allow a sinner to turn away from sin and live a good life in peace, because God's words said; "the world is under the power of sin (Satan) (Gal 3:23) and that we are living as slaves of the ruling spirits (evil spirits) of the universe."(Gal 4:3) **These two Words of God gives a clear message that, "men born of flesh will be subjected the power of sin as slaves"**. To break open the chain of slavery, we need a power which has to be even greater than the power of sin. King Solomon explained this truth that the whole human race is under the power of sin/bondage of sin, and is bound in the darkness by invisible chains which is the satanic bondage which he calls it as the invisible chains that are binding every human being.

He said; "Farmers, shepherds, and labourers (refers to whole mankind), out in the countryside were captured by the same inevitable fate (sin) and are bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain." (Wis 17:17) The message is that; everyone in this world is a captive for sin & prisoner of darkness. That is why the whole human race is living as slaves for various bondages. Yes, *we are ruled by the prince of darkness for Jesus said that Satan is the ruler of this world. (Jh 14:30) Now we understand that this world is under bondage of sin and that we become slaves of Satan if we sin.*

What shall we do at this juncture? Since we are slaves for sin:
 >> *Shall we take this as an excuse and continue to live in sin and enjoy sinful pleasures all our life and lose eternal life promised by Jesus Christ? (Jh 11:25)*
 >> *Can we afford to lose the presence of God in our life? For God promised to live in us with all his glory (Zech 2:5)*

>> Can we afford to lose joy, peace, power and fruits of the Holy Spirit that the Lord has promised to those who obey him? (Gal 5:22)

>> Can we afford to lose the blessings that God has promised to his obedient people? (Duet 26:1-13 & Lev 28:3-14)

>> Can we live as prisoners of darkness bound in invisible chains, instead of enjoying the freedom that God offers? (Is 61:1-4)

No. Never! God never willed that human beings who were created in the image of God should live as prisoners of darkness and slaves of Satan. God willed that man should know God, live with spiritual powers that God promised him and rule over the powers of darkness, and glorify him. Having known the truth that God created us to live in holiness to glorify his Spirit in our body and also having come to know that we are living in bondage as captives and prisoners for sin, we need to set ourselves free at the earliest opportunity from this bondage. Or, our sins lead us in the path of eternal damnation, there-by we will lose our eternal life. Yes, our soul will be destroyed. The word of God says; "A slave has to set himself free at the earliest opportunity" (1 Cor 7:21)

Then how do one sets himself free from this bondage? First we will understand how we are getting into bondage of sin. Then we will understand how to set ourselves free from this bondage. The answers for the rest of the questions in this book will give us wisdom to understand these spiritual truth. Here in next Chapter, we will try to introspect ourselves to understand; "How the power sin which is working in us makes us as slaves of sin, captives of crime, prisoners of sinful habits and salves for evil bondages"?

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO - 6

HOW DOES THE SATAN WORK?

To understand how the Satan works in us let us first understand the following:

- > *Who is Satan?*
- > *Why is Satan doing everything against God and human beings?*
- > *How does Satan enter our body and soul?*
- > *How does Satan deceive Human beings?*

WHO IS SATAN?

When God created angels they were spiritual beings existed like God. But, they were not God. Their task was to worship God, praise him and adore him for all time. (Rev 4:6-8) Further they were given specific task to carry God's plan on earth. **We read in Scriptures in many instance that angel of the Lord went with people for specific purpose as we read below:**

>> At a very old age Abraham told his oldest servant to go to the place where he was born and to find a bride for his son Isaac. Abraham said that God will send an angle before him to complete the task. (Gen 24:1-7)

>> God told Moses to lead the Israelites to Promised Land. God assured him that his angel will guide him in this task." (EX 32:34)

>> God sent angel of death to kill all first born male child in Egypt on the night of Passover to deliver the Israelites. (Ex 12:21-36)

>> God sent angel Raphael with Tobias to protect him from the demonic forces when Tobit sent him to his native place Media, to fetch money which he had left with Gabael. (Tobit 12:1-15)

>> God sent Angel Gabriel to explain the vision what Daniel saw, (9:20-27) and Angel Michael to help Daniel when he was being opposed by king of Persia. (10:1-21)

>> God sent angel Uriel to Esdras to explain the spiritual truths on what is happening in the world and what will happen at the end of times. (Book No 1 & 2 of Esdras)

>> God sent Angel Gabriel to announce the Good News on birth of Jesus Christ to Mother Mary. (Luk 1:26-38)

>> God sent an angel to guide Apostle Philip to go to Gaza from Jerusalem. (Acts 8:26)

>> God has assigned one angel for every child born on earth to be their guardian angel as we read in the book Exodus where God tells

Moses that: "I will send an angel a head of you as you travel to protect you and bring you to a place where I have prepared. Pay attention to him and obey him. Do not rebel against him, for I have sent him and he will not pardon such rebellion. (Ex 23:20-21)

There are numerous instances given in Scriptures where God sent his angels to guide & lead people to accomplish his plan. Lucifer was one of these angels created by God who had extraordinary talent for singing. God was highly pleased with Lucifer because of his talent. But pride took over Lucifer and he questioned God as to; "Why should he worship him since he is also like God"? God was highly displeased with it. He threw Lucifer out from his Kingdom. Along with Lucifer one third angels in heaven who were also filled with pride and refused to worship God followed him and went out of paradise. Those angels who were thrown out of heaven became evil spirits. **The Lucifer became the head of the evil spirits; the Satan** (Rev 12:7-17)

Why is Satan doing everything against God & human beings?
To understand answer to this question we should know 'how God created man'? & 'What was the status man before he committed sin'?

HOW DID GOD CREAT MAN?

When God created man he created him in his own image. (Gen 1:27) God exists as three persons viz; God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. Though they are three persons, they co-exists as one God which is known as the "Holy Trinity." This is the Spiritual Mistry which cannot be understood with human wisdom. However the Church & believers in Christ accept this Mistry as truth. God who exists in Holy Trinity, created man in his own image. Thus, was created man in "human trinity" which consists three bodies. Firstly, Physical body, which can be seen & felt. Secondly, Spiritual body, which cannot be seen or felt. And thirdly, our Soul which is an ever living-being, breathed in to our physical body by God when we are conceived in mother's womb. The soul cannot be felt or seen.

The Bible reveals truth on existence of man in three bodies but as one person in following Words of God:

>> "God who shaped man (his physical body) breathed into him an active soul and a living spirit" (Wis 15:11)

>> "There is of course, a physical body so there has to be spiritual body". (1 Cor 15:44)

>> "May the God who gives you peace make you holy in every way and keep your whole being: spirit, soul and body free from every fault at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Thess 5:23)

This is how we discern the spiritual truth that man was created in the image of God & man exists in three bodies which is the human trinity.

WHAT WAS MAN'S STATUS BEFORE HE COMMITTED SIN?

When God created Adam & Eve in his image, they were like angels because they remained pure and holy as God. They had physical body in which God breathed an ever living soul. Also had an active spiritual body. God gave this spiritual body to Adam and Eve for God to communicate with them and vice versa. God was communicating with Adam & Eve through this spiritual body. Adam & Eve were enjoying the presence of God around them, thus were enjoying a wonderful life. *This was the status that Adam & Eve enjoyed before they committed sin.*

Satan was jealous on the status enjoyed by Adam & Eve. When Adam & Eve were in the Garden of Eden they lived in obedience to God. And they were communicating with God through their spirit. They enjoyed status like angels when they were living in obedience to God. *The Satan envied the status enjoyed them. Satan was jealous because he himself lost paradise due to pride. (Wis 2:23-24) So he hatched a plan to destroy the status that Adam & Eve were enjoying.*

The Satan hatched a cunning plan to deceive Adam & Eve. In his plan, Satan wanted to break the relation between God and man. The only way to break this relation is to make Adam and Eve to commit sin which God hates in all its forms. But how to make them commit sin? Because God's Spirit was always burning around Adam and Eve as a wall of fire. (Zech 2:5) Now Satan cannot breach this wall of fire which God has placed around them to reach Adam and Eve, and make them fall in sin. So he hatched a cunning plan by which he wanted to lure Adam & Eve to breach the wall of fire by themselves so that he can plant the seed of sin in their body. God gave Adam & Eve freedom to act and to choose between good & evil and between life & death. (Duet 30:1, 15 & 19) The Satan planned to use this freedom to bring them out of God's protection by breaching the wall of fire. Hence the Satan lured & deceived Adam and Eve to disobey God and to breach the wall of fire burning around them to commit sin.

Adam & Eve were deceived and disobeyed God: When Adam and Eve were enticed by Satan and deceived to commit sin, they forgot God's commandment that; "they are not to disobey God." (Gen 3:2-3) They fell for temptation and breached the wall of fire on

their own and committed sin. (Gen 3:6-7) When they committed sin, the Satan planted the seed of sin in their body. (Rom 5:12) Thus sin entered human body. This is known as the 'original sin'. When sin entered man's body, God who is holy, rejected Adam & Eve who were defiled by sin. They were sent out of the paradise. (Gen 3:14-20)

Satan brought death in human body and destroys soul: Thus the Satan brought separation between God and man. (Is 50:1-2) The Satan did this because he was jealous about the status that Adam and Eve were enjoying in paradise, which the Satan had lost due to his pride. (Wis 2:23-24) Further the Satan wanted to destroy human body what God created and the soul which God breathed in the human body, because the thief comes in order to steal, kill and destroy. (Jh 10:10) This sin which entered human body brought death with it. (Rom 5:12) Because the nature of sin is to bring death and destruction. That's how man is destined to die and return to soil because everyone in the world has sinned. (Gen 3:19) When man dies in sin without repentance and forgiveness his soul is destined for eternal damnation. (1 Cor 6:9-10 & Gal 5:19-21)

Scriptures explains these truths: King Solomon said; *"In God's eternal plan he wanted that everything he created might continue to exist, and everything he created was wholesome and good". (Wis 1:14) "When God created man, he did not intend that man should die. It was Devil's jealousy that brought death (Sin) in to the man and those who belong to the Devil will die."*(Wis 2:23-24) When Adam was deceived by Satan the seed of sin was sowed in human flesh. Thus "Sin came into this world through one man, and his sin brought death with it". As a result death has spread to the whole human race because everyone has sinned."(Rom 5:12) In jealousy the Satan worked to deceive man to make him as slave of sin, thereby man will glorify Satan instead of God. This how Satan brought separation between God and Man. (Is 50:1-2)

WHAT IS MAN'S STATUS AFTER HE COMMITTED SIN?

When man disobeyed God by committing sin, God pronounced judgment on man and the Satan (Gen 3:14-21) While pronouncing judgment God decreed that man will not use his spiritual body any more for any purpose. Hence man could not communicate with God through his human spirit. That's how there came separation between God and man. When man committed sin, he plunged into darkness there-by fear came in him. In fear man hid himself from God.(Gen 3:8-10) In darkness he experienced all negative impulses of sin. Thus

after committing sin, man lost the status which he enjoyed before committing sin .i.e., presence of God, and his communication with God through human spirit.

How does Satan enter our body which is the temple of the Holy Spirit? One thing we must understand about our spiritual life is that; `the Satan has all power in this world only for destruction. Satan has no power to create anything. He continues to work against God's plan deceiving believers even now. That's why Jesus said; the thief comes in order to steal, kill and destroy. (Jh 10:10) **Yes. Now let us try and understand how Satan comes to steal, kill and destroy us.**

Here I want to explain this spiritual truth in four stages:

Stage-1: *How do we live this spiritual life in God's love?*

Stage-2: *How God's love is protecting us from the evil spirits who are determined to destroy our body and soul?*

Stage-3: *How does Satan enter our body & soul in spite of God's protection?*

Stage-4: *What happens to a believer when Satan enters our body?*

STAGE-1

HOW DO WE LIVE THIS SPIRITUAL LIFE IN GOD'S LOVE?

Our body which is made of flesh & blood is weak and mortal. (Mark 14:38) That's why Jesus said: "*Remain united in me and I will remain united in you. A branch cannot bear fruits on its own; it can do so only if it remains united in the vine. "You cannot bear fruit unless you remain in me. I am the vine you are the branches. Whoever remains united in me and I in him will bear much fruit; for you can do nothing without me."*(Jh 15:4-5)

The meaning is: Branch refers to 'man' and the vine refers to 'Christ'. Jesus said; man cannot live alone in flesh & blood. He has to remain united with him to receive God's life-giving Spirit (Jh 6:63) so that he can fight against evil spirits and protect his body and soul. If man separates himself from Spirit of Jesus he will be hunted by evil spirits. His soul will be dead for God because the Satan will abuse his body & soul by filling him with sins, which will lead to spiritual death of soul and physical death of body. In this condition if man does not repent and turn away from but dies in sin his soul will be condemned to hell. This is how words of Jesus is fulfilled. That is why Jesus said; "You can do nothing without me. With me you can do all

things. (Jh 15:5) Further St Paul said; "I can do all things with Christ who strengthens me." (Phil 4:13)

Further Jesus said; "Man does not live by bread alone; but by every word spoken by God."(Mat 4:4)

Yes, we receive God's constant love through his words as King David said; "More than once I heard God say that power belongs to him and that his love is constant".(Ps 62:11) God spoke through Prophet Jeremiah and said; "People of Israel, I have loved you, so I continue to love you with an everlasting love"(Jer 31:3) Jesus said; "What gives life is God's Spirit; man's power is of no use at all. The Words I have spoken bring God's life-giving Spirit in to you."(Jh 6:63) *These words spoken by God gives discernment that; "in this world, man cannot live in flesh & blood separating himself from the love of God. He can live this earthly life only by receiving God's love through life-giving Spirit of God. This spiritual truth that; "Our body lives healthy life by God's life-giving Spirit" is hidden from people.*

When we live uniting ourselves with the Word of God, (Jesus is the Word of God; Jh 1:14) we will experience blessings that are promised by God. Yes, we will experience good physical and mental health, and fruits of Spirit which are; love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, humility and self-control.(Gal 5:22) Above all we will receive the promised eternal life. ***This is how we live spiritual life day-by-day through the words spoken by God's and experience his love.***

STAGE-2

HOW GOD 'S LOVE IS PROTECTING US FROM EVIL SPIRITS? (Which are determined to destroy our body and soul)

By being united with Christ, man enjoys everything that God has created, his mercy, love & providence. God is also aware that Satan is waiting to destroy man and his blessings because the nature of sin is to cause destruction. (Jh 10:10) But God has promised that he will burn around man as a wall of fire to protect him from the power of evil as we read that; *"The Lord has promised that he himself will be a wall of fire round the city (man) to protect it and that he will live there (in our body) in all his glory."(Zech 2:5)* Yes, God is burning around us as a wall of fire to protect us from evil spirits who are roaming around like a lion, looking for someone to devour and destroy.(1 Pet 5:8) Further God has given many promises to protect us from the power of evil. A few are given below:

>> "I will let them to graze in safety in the mountain meadows in the valleys and in green pastures of the land of Israel. I myself will be the Shepherd of my sheep and I will find them a place to rest. I the Sovereign Lord have spoken" (Ezkl 34:14-15)

>> "The protector of Israel never dozes or sleeps. The Lord will guard you and he will be on your side to protect you. The sun will not hurt you by day nor moon by night. The Lord will protect you from all danger; he will keep you safe. He will protect as you come and go, now and forever" (Ps 121:4-8)

>>"I stretched out the heaven and laid the foundations of earth. I say Jerusalem, you are my people! I have given you my teachings and I protect you with my hand."(Is 51:16)

*Also our God gives many promises for our protection in the Book Psalm 23 (God the Shepherd) Psalm 91 (God the protector) and Psalm 121(The Lord our Protector- You are advised to read these Psalms to know the protection that the Lord gives to his faithful children) Yes, "like mountains surround Jerusalem, the Lord will surround his people to protect them from evil spirits now and for ever". (Ps 125:2) **This is how the Lord will protect his children from the power of evil one who are determined to destroy us.***

STAGE-3

HOW DOES THE SATAN ENTER OUR BODY AND SOUL? (In spite of God's protection)

This is a very interesting question, because when the Lord himself is burning as a wall of fire around us, how can Satan breach this wall of fire and enter into our body and soul? For this question the Scriptures give following answer: "A person is tempted when he is drawn away and trapped by his own evil desire. Then his evil desire conceives and gives birth to sin. When sin is full-grown it gives birth to death." (James 1:14-15) St James says; when we get attracted towards evil desires and commit sin, we invite Satan into our life. We go against our conscience which warns us not to indulge in sin. But we ignore the warning because the power of sin is very strong to resist. ***We are not able to resist attractions of sin because we fall in God's grace to remain firm & faithful to him. In our temptation the Satan cannot touch us because, he has no authority to breach the wall of fire that God has given to protect us. (Zech 2:5)***

But out of ignorance on consequences of sin, we exercise our free will & choice to give-in for temptations. Thus we decide to break the wall of fire out of our free will to enjoy the pleasures of sin. Now we make a whole in the wall of fire burning around us and come out of God's protection to commit sin. When we commit sin we open up our body & soul for the Satan to enter in. Thus we invite Satan to come in our life. **God has given us "Wisdom & Freedom" to act wisely knowing what is good & bad.** When we indulge in sin we exercise our freedom to disobey God and make a hole in the wall of fire that is burning around us for the Satan to enter in our life. Satan has no authority to breach this wall of fire which God himself has given us to protect us from the evil one. But we breach this wall for Satan to enter our life by digging a hole in the wall.

This spiritual truth has been spoken by God through Prophet Ezekiel. He said; "The prince (Satan) who is ruling them will shoulder his pack in the dark and escape through the hole that they dig for him in the wall. He will cover his eyes and not see where he is going. They will be refugees and captives."(Ezkl 12:11-12)

Once again God spoke this spiritual truth through Prophet Jeremiah.

He said; "Death (sin) has come in through our windows (our eyes, mouth & mind) & entered our palaces (palace is our body and soul); it has cut down the children in the streets and young men in the market places. (Jer 9:21) "Sin has destroyed life of God's children."

The truth is: We invite the Satan in our life by; what we think, what we see, what we speak, what we do, and how we live life carelessly. God said; Ungodly people have brought death (invited Satan) on themselves by things they have said and done. They yearn for death as if it were a lover. They have gone in to partnership with death." (Wis 1:16) Yes, we live such careless life because we do not respect our body as the "Temple of Holy Spirit." (1Cor 3:16) Instead of glorifying God's Spirit in body, we invite Satan in our body & soul and glorify him. (1 Cor 6:19-20) Once Satan enters our body he binds our soul with invisible chains. (Wis 17:17) We become captives, refugees and slaves of Satan. (Ezkl 12:12) **God has given us wisdom to know what is good & evil and act wisely to avoid slavery.**

When we go through moments of temptations, God wants that we should exercise caution and be wise not to yield for temptation

and sin. It is purely our choice; whether we reject temptation with God's help, or indulge in sin.

At this juncture God gives us freedom to make choice as below:

>> "I am now giving you a choice between God's blessing and God's curse ;(Duet 30:1)

>> "Today I am giving you a choice between good and evil, between life and death". (Duet 30:15)

>> "And now I am giving you the choice between life and death, between God's blessing and God's curse. I call heaven and earth to witness the choice you make. Choose life."(Duet 30: 19) ***God has also given us free will, either to obey or disobey God's Laws.***

HOW DO WE ACT WHEN WE GO THROUGH MOMENTS OF TEMPTATIONS?

Now let us introspect ourselves: When God gave us choice as we read above, how did we exercise this choice in our past life? We may recall the past incidences in our life when we committed sin. We will understand that; "it was by our own choice, by our free will and by our deliberate decision, we indulged in sin and allowed Satan to enter in our life". Because we desired for sin & its pleasures. Thus we invited Satan in life by making a hole in the wall of fire that God placed around us, knowing well about all its consequences. Yes, we chose to do evil and opened our body for Satan to enslave us.

Dear believers, unless we invite Satan in our life he has no power over us. He can't force us to commit sin. If we give consent and invite him, he can take control over us and abuses our body which is 'the temple of living God'. During moments of temptations if we fast and pray, take the help of Holy Spirit and Mother Mary, and decide to resist our desires to commit sin, and reject temptations we will experience grace, strength, and protection against all tricks of the evil and stay alive for God. But God is awaiting for our decision to give up our desire to commit sin. If we willingly give up ourselves for sin, Satan will make us slaves of sin, bind our soul with an invisible chains (Wis 17:17) and escape through the hole which we dig for him in the wall of fire, which still burns around us.

However sinful we are, this wall of fire will continue to burn around us till we die because God's mercy never fails in honour of his promises which are given below;

>> "Mountains may crumble, hills may be moved. But my love shall never depart from you". (Is 54:10)

- >> "Because, God loves us with an everlasting Love". (Jer 31:3)
 >> "Because God's grace and mercy are like a river that never runs dry."(2 Esdras 2:32)
 >> Because, Jesus promised; "I will never leave you nor will I forsake you."(Heb 13:5).

STAGE -4

WHAT HAPPENS WHEN SIN ENTER OUR BODY?

When Satan enter our body he will do what is natural to him. Jesus said the thief (Satan) comes in order to steal, kill and destroy. (Jh 10:10)

SIN (Satan) COMES TO STEAL (Jh 10:10)

Yes, Satan lures us to commit sin. After we have committed sin we will realise that he has stolen the fruits of the Holy Spirit which were abiding in us. Over a period of time we will gradually experience all the negative attributes, (fruits of evil spirit) creeping in our life and replacing fruits of Holy Spirit as explained below:

LOVE: Instead of showing selfless **love** to others, we will exhibit hostile attitude, irritation, hate & selfish desires. We will become greedy, miserly, conceited & suspicious which will lead to enmity & division. (Mat 22:39 & Gal 5:13-14) Because of these negative attributes we will not be able to accept true love from others and reciprocate. Our attitude will become narrow minded because our actions will not be based on love but on selfish desires.

JOY: Instead of enjoying **joy** of the Lord every moment in life, (Phil 4:4 & 1Thes 5:16) we will be upset, marooned in sadness and living in guilt of past sins, events/incidents that happened long ago. This will make us depressed and this depression will cause loneliness resulting in a display of introvert attitude. **Living in depression is a sin against God, for God said;**

>> "Do not deliberately torture yourself by giving in to depression. Do not deprive yourself a single day happiness. Happiness makes for long life and makes life worth living". (Sir 30:21-22)

>> "Do not cling to the events of the past or dwell on what happened long ago. Watch out new things I am going to do. You can see it now. I will make roads through wilderness and give you streams of water there". (Is 43:18)

PEACE: Instead of enjoying **peace** that Christ gives, (Jh 4:27 & Phil 4:6-7) we will live in disturbed state of mind which will affect the decisions we make. But God said; "Peace that Christ gives you will help you to take good decisions."(Col 3:15) When we lose peace our decisions go wrong, our words would stumble. This will trigger uneasiness in our relation in the society and commotion in family. When our mind is disturbed it will affect the secretion of enzymes in our body leading to malfunction of our vital organs resulting in bad health.

PATIENTS: Instead of observing **patients** in our relation with others & showing tolerance with one another and displaying patients in our trials and tribulations,(Eph 4:2,32 & Col 3:12-13) we will become very irritant, angry, agitated, anxious & impatient. Thus we will show hastiness in everything we do. This will make our decisions and our actions go wrong which is turn will destroy our life and our relation with others causing division.

KINDNESS AND GOODNESS: Instead of showing **kindness and goodness** in our behaviour and relation with others, we will exhibit cruel and harsh behaviour. (Mat 9:13, 12:7, & 25:35 and Is 58:6-7) This will disturb the atmosphere in the family, society and will earn a bad reputation for ourselves. All our good work and good deeds will be overshadowed by our cruel and harsh behaviour which will depict us as bad people. And, thus we being followers of Jesus Christ will project Christ in poor light.

FAITHFULNESS: Instead of showing **faithfulness** to God, to our spouse, to our employer/employees, and to State/Nation, (Ex 20:1-5 & Heb 13:4) we will become unfaithful/disloyal in all our relations/dealings. Such an attitude will break family ties, alienate us in workplace / society and identify us as criminals in the eyes of law. Because of unfaithful attitude, we will lose trust in God, in our spouse and in others, thereby we will always live in fear and anxiety. This attitude which will never allow us to enjoy the peace (Jh 14:27) and rest (Mat 11:28 & Heb 4:1-10) that the Lord offers.

HUMILITY: Instead of showing **humility** in everything we do, we live life swollen with pride. (Mat 11:29 & 1 Pet 5:7) It will lead to our destruction, because, "God hates the sight of a proud man". (Prov 6:16 & Ps 101:5) And "Pride is the cause for fall many kingdoms". (Sir 10:12-18) Jesus said; "Learn from me, I am gentle and humble in spirit", and show humbleness in everything you do. (Mat 11:29)

SELF-CONTROL: Instead exercising **self-control** in all our weaknesses, thereby we remain firm and strong to fight temptations, (Jer 15:19-21) we will become weak in all areas of our life, such as; our behaviour, feelings, desires, emotions, thoughts, in our eyes, in our words, in our actions. This will make us to fall in sin repeatedly and make us habituated to sinful life. The Satan will use our weaknesses very powerfully to keep us as slaves of sin and destroy our spiritual life, body and soul thereby we will lose our eternal life.

We will realise that the Satan has deceived us and stolen the fruits of the Holy Spirit that God gave us to live a righteous life along with the material blessings which we possessed. Yes, by yielding for sin we will live in the shadow of the darkness longing for God's presence.

SIN (Satan) COMES TO KILL (Jh 10:10)

Our soul rejoices in the presence of God: When God created man, he breathed in him a living soul and an active spirit. (Wis 15:11) This soul which is a living being comes from God. It always rejoices in the presence of the Lord. King David said; "My soul rejoices in the Lord". (Ps 35:9) Mother Mary said; my heart praises the Lord; my soul rejoices because of God my Saviour for he has remembered me his lowly servant. (Luk 1:46-48). This is how God planned in eternity that; 'our soul is to be nourished and filled with all graces through the anointment and the presence of the Holy Spirit'. When we commit sin, our soul which had been rejoicing in the Lord before we indulged in sin, is now bound in invisible chains.

Our soul is bound by invisible chain when we sin: This "Spiritual Truth" has been explained by King Solomon in his words. He said; "Farmers, shepherds and labourers out in the countryside (refers to all people of this world) were captured by the same inevitable fate (sin) and bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain. (Satanic bondage) (Wis 17: 17) Yes, when we commit sin, we invite Satan in our life by making a hole in the wall of fire which is burning around us, (Zech 2:5) as explained earlier. The Satan enters our life through the hole that we dig for him in the wall of fire (Ezkl 12:11-12), and binds our body and our soul with invisible chains. There after our soul loses its Joy and freedom. Hence it can't rejoice in the Lord.

OUR SOUL IS DEAD FOR GOD- SATAN KILLS THE LIFE IN SOUL:

Thus the Satan kills the happiness in our soul which dies to rejoice in the Lord because, "Sinful passions of the world will tear our soul in to pieces like a bull." (Sir 6:2) Sin plunges our soul in

darkness, separates us from God's presence. When our soul is lost for presence of God the Satan will feast on our soul by luring us to sin repeatedly, thereby our soul will be dead for God. Jesus describes this situation as; "Wherever there is a dead body (a soul dead for God's presence), vultures will gather feed on them." (Luk 17:37) The Satan will use our weakness to drive us to commit more & more sins. Thus he will deceive us to go beyond the point of no return, where we can never repent. This will be the plight of our soul, if we continue to live in sin without repentance. Our soul will be dead for God because our sins will bind our soul and the Satan will kill our soul.

SATAN COMES TO DESTROY OUR SOUL & ETERNAL LIFE

The sins (Satan) whom we invite in us will steal the fruits of the Holy Spirit from us, thus take away life in our soul (Kill the soul) and plunge us in deep darkness. At this stage, if we do not repent, surrender our sins and turn back to the Lord, Satan will gain full control over our soul. He will make us slaves of sin, separate us from God and cause us to live in darkness. (Is 50:1) The Satan will destroy all blessings that the Lord bestowed upon us, as explained below:

Sin will destroy our wealth: By introducing a person to various sinful habits & sinful relations the Satan will make him to live as slaves for those sins. He will make him to squander all his wealth on those sinful habits / sinful relation. Without realising this hard fact he will continue to spend his earnings and squander his wealth on those sins and end up like the prodigal son as Jesus spoke. (Luke 15:10-30) Thus the Satan will destroy his wealth which God gave.

Sin will destroy our body which is temple of Holy Spirit: When sin (Satan) enter our body, he will do what is natural to him. The nature of sin is destruction, because sin hurts our body. When Jesus healed a paralysed man who was lowered from roof top, he said to the sick man; "your sins are forgiven, my friend." (Luk 5:5-15) When Jesus healed a man who was lying next to the pool Bethesda for thirty-eight years, he healed him and said; "Go home. Do not sin any more, or else much worse thing will happen to you". (Jn 5:1-14) In these two instances when Jesus healed the sick he warned them saying; "you are sick because of your sin," and he forgave their sins. They were restored to health.

Here Jesus proclaimed; "Sin brings sickness to destroy our body" because, God said; *If you sin you are hurting yourself.*" (Sir 19:4) *Your sins will eat up your flesh like fire and destroy your body.* (Prov 5:1-14, 5:7-12, 6:20-29, & Jas 5:2-3)

Sin is like poison of a snake which destroys flesh: Yes, when sin enters our body it is like the poison of a snake which destroys the blood vessels, disintegrates the muscles, and finally destroys the body. We will spend all our money to get ourselves treated only to learn that the Satan has destroyed our finance and our body leading to death at an early age. This is how sin will destroy our body. That's why God warns us saying; *"Now listen to me, my sons never forget what I am saying. Keep away from sin. Do not get near its door. If you do, others will gain the respect what once you had and you will die young at the hands of merciless people". (Prov 5:7-9) God said "But righteous people live long life". (Prov 16:31, 10:27) Righteous people, who avoid sin will live full life. (Deut 5:33 & Eph 6:2-30)*

Sin (Satan) will destroy our soul & eternal life: (Jh 10:10)

Satan inflict sin in us: The Satan first introduces us to sinful habits and then to sinful relations to squander our wealth. Then, through these sins he will inflict all kinds of illnesses in our body to destroy our earnings and destroy our body. (Sin brings sickness in our body as we read in Prov 5:1-14, 5:7-12, 6:20-29, & Jas 5:2-3. Finally, frustration will set in us due to chronic sickness. Unresolved problems will enter in our family due to these sinful habits and sinful relations causing distress. Now people will look for solutions which are not forthcoming through scriptures because people continue to live in sin. Their mind is stubborn and their heart has become like stone. (Ezkl 11:19-20 & 36:26-28) Hence they do not give-up their sinful ways of living and they do not surrender their life to God.

When we hold on to our sin, God doesn't answer our prayers nor does he heal our sickness. God says to sinners; "Do you think that I am too weak to save you or too deaf to hear your call for help! It is because of your sins that I do not hear you. It is your sins that separate you from me when you try to worship me. You are guilty of lying, violence and murder. (Is 59:1-2) But when we obey God and live righteous life God is pleased with us and shows his concern and favour. He says; "But for you who obey me, my saving power will raise on you like the sun and bring healing like sun rays. You will be as free and happy as calves let out of stall" (Malachi 4:2) But, people do not take God's words seriously. Many people do not hesitate to give-up faith in living God to find solutions to their problems in worldly ways which are against teachings of the Scriptures.

Satan make us fall in faith: Since people have not given-up their sins and surrendered their life in God's service, they do not receive God's favour and healing. They continue to suffer in their

sickness. Now people look for solution outside the teachings of scriptures, in the manner how people of this world try to solve their problems. People of this world try to solve their problems through astrology, fortune telling, Zodiac sign, consulting the spirits of dead, pranic healing, reiki healing, acupuncture, witchcraft, magic charms, spells, worship pagan and offering human sacrifice etc. These practices will destroy our faith in Jesus Christ. When we lose faith in Jesus Christ we plunge in darkness. In this appalling situation, when our faith has been drifted away from the living God, we will not be able to repent for our sin because of our stubbornness. If we die in this condition our soul will be condemned for eternal damnation.

Satan makes us slaves of sin: By this time if we have not taken corrective steps to repent and turn back to the Lord, Satan will make us prisoners of habits, captives of crimes and slaves of sin. Satan will subvert our mind in such a way that we will never be able to repent.

Finally, the Satan will take us beyond the point of no return. At this juncture we cannot repent for our sins, even if we want to repent. St Paul said; "some people will go into the houses and gain control over weak women who are burdened with the guilt of their sins and driven by all kinds of desires and passions. Women who are trying to learn (trying to repent for their sins) but can never come to know of the truth. (They can never repent because the evil spirits will be so intense in them.)(2 Tim 3:6-7)

Satan will sink us deep in Darkness: The meaning of word of God given above is; the power of sin will be so intense in people that 'sin will be the order of the day' for them. People will feel proud to live in sin and go on doing evil things. God said; "Time will come when people will not listen to sound doctrine and follow their heart desires and collect more and more teachers who will tell them what they are itching to hear. They will turn from listening to the truth and give their attention to legends. But you should keep control of yourself in all circumstances, endure sufferings, do the work of a preacher of the Good News and perform your whole duty as a servant of God."(2 Tim 4:3-5) During such testing times if people want to turn away from their sinful ways, the Satan will not allow them to go out of his clutch. He will send their friends and relatives who will burden them with more & more sins so that due to burden of sins (Wis 9:15) those who want to repent for sins will sink further deep in sin and darkness. And thus the Satan will rule over such people.

Satan prevents sinners from repenting: *When we sink deep in sin, we become refugees and captives of Satan. (Ezkl 12:11-12) He will take us "beyond the point of no return", where we cannot*

repent and turn back to God. He will use our weakness as his weapon to bind us and sink us very deep in sin so that even if we want to repent, the burden of our sins will not allow us to repent, because, we have gone beyond the point of no return. St Paul explains this truth in 1 Tim 6:6-10 & 2 Tim 3:1-9. Believers are advised to read it to gain understanding. Finally we will die in sin without repentance, and lose our soul for God. Our soul will be condemned to hell.

Satan destroys our soul and eternal life: *The Satan will drive people to this stage in life by keeping them as slaves of sin till their death. If we die in sin without repenting for our sins and receiving absolution of sins through Sacrament of Confession our soul will be condemned for eternal damnation forever as we read in 2 Esdras 7: 78-87. Yes, our soul will plunge in darkness for eternal damnation forever. This is how the Satan who enters us in the form of sin, will steal our spiritual blessings, kill our rejoicing soul and finally destroy our wealth, our body and our soul.*

Finally, the Satan will destroy the eternal life promised by Jesus Christ. *Because people will die in sin without repentance. Without repentance we cannot obtain salvation for God said: "Repent and turn away from your sins, because the Kingdom of God is awaiting for you". (Mat 3:2) This is the Kingdom of God what Jesus Christ promised his believers. He said; "I am the resurrection and the life. Whoever believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die." (Jn 11:25)*

SIN IS A SYSTEMATIC SPIRITUAL PROCESS WHICH DESTROY OUR ETERNAL LIFE

Dear believers in Christ, we have seen in detail how the Satan *comes to steal our spiritual blessings, takes away life in our soul and destroys our physical body & soul, thereby he destroys the promised eternal life. This is a systematic spiritual process that Satan is adopting to destroy human beings who are created in the image of God. This is a three prong attack on mankind by the powers of darkness to destroy us.*

I would like to project this process in a very simple manner *so that believers understand it easily and guard themselves against the tricks of this cunning beast Satan as Jesus Christ warns us (Mark 13:5,9,23 &35) so that we may not become victims for his tricks.*

First attack by Satan: *He will introduce you to sinful habits and sinful relations to make your mind weak for them so that you will*

lose self-control over yourself and become slaves for those habits and relations.

Second attack by Satan: *Having made you weak in your mind for those habits and relations now he will bring all kinds of illnesses related to those habits & relations and break your body so badly that you will never recover. This will cause you to lose faith in living God. Hence you will look for healing outside the teachings in Scriptures as people of this world do. Thus he will make you to fall in faith.*

Third attack by Satan: *Having made you lose self-control over yourself, having broken your body through sickness, and having made your faith weak, now you are a very easy target for the Satan. Now the Satan will pound you with more and more sins through your friends and relatives. He will take you to a stage which is "beyond the point of no return" and sink you deep in sin. At this stage you will crave for more and more sins, pleasures and reject the truth (Christ). The burden of sins will never allow you to repent even if you want to repent. If you die now, the Satan will gain your soul. You will be lost for Jesus Christ and for the eternal life promised by him.*

Dear believers in Jesus Christ, this is a wakeup call that God *gives you to turn away from your sins and accept the word of God in faith and live life in all its fullness. God is willing to help you provided your desire for his help and make a firm decision with conviction to turn away from sin. God knows that there is no safety for sinners(Is 48:22) and hence God is waiting all day long with open arms for his rebellious people to return to him with broken heart, contrite heart in true repentance.(Rom 10:22)*

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO: 7

DOES SATAN HAS POWER OVER MAN?

Jesus said that Satan is the ruler of the world: Then does Satan has power over the human beings? This is a very interesting question! Because the Scriptures says:

>> "Sin came to the world through one man and this sin brought death with it. As a result, death has spread to the world because everyone has sinned. (Rom 5:12)

>> "Everyone has sinned and is far away from saving presence of God". (Rom 3:23)

>> "The Scriptures says that the whole world is under power of sin."(Gal 3:22)

>> "Because everyone has sinned, people have gone away from God and are living as captives of sin and prisoners of crimes. (Is 50:1)

>> "Jesus said; the ruler of this world (Satan) has come to rule the people". (Jh12:31) **All these Words gives us an impression that Satan has power over every man on earth.**

But, believers in Christ should not to forget what God has spoken about his relation with human beings. About his relation with us, God said:

> "I created you in my own image and likeness". (Gen 1:26-27)

> "Israel, you are my dearest son, the child I love best" (Jer 31:20)

> "Israel, I have called you by name & you are mine". (Is 43:1-2)

> "Jerusalem, I have engraved your name in hand. (Is 49:16)

> "Israel, you are precious in his eyes". (Is 43:3-4)

> "Israel, you we are like beautiful crown for the Lord". (Is 62:3)

> "Your body is the temple of Holy Spirit". (1Cor 3:16-17)

> "Israel, you are my witnesses to ends of the earth". (Acts 1:8)

> "I will demonstrate my holiness to world through you. (Ezkl 36:23)

> "I have chosen you to bear much fruit. The kind of fruits that will endure". (Jh15:16)

> "You are chosen generation, the King's priest, holy nation, and God's own people, chosen to proclaim wonderful acts of God who called you out of darkness into his marvellous light". (1 Pet 2:9)

> "I will make you proud and confident soldier. You will fight holy war against the Satan. (Is 13:3)

Finally to protect us from the Satan and to do God's work in the field of salvation God gives us a promise that; "He himself will be burning around us as a wall of fire to protect us and dwell in us in all his glory. (Zech 2:5)

SATAN HAS NO POWER OVER CHILDREN OF GOD

From God's Words quoted above it is absolutely clear that we belong to our Creator; the living God, who holds us in very high esteem. And he wants to accomplish his eternal plan in this universe through us. He said; "I alone know the plan I have for you, plans to bring about future you hope for" (Jer 29:11) Thus, God spoke about his plan for every one of us. Through this individual plan for his children, God will accomplish his eternal plan for the universe which he spoke through St Paul; In all his wisdom and insight "God did what he purposed and made known us his secret plan he had already decided to complete by means of Christ. This plan, which God will complete when the time is right; to bring all creation to gather, everything in heaven and on earth as one family with Christ as its head. (Eph 1:9-10)

>> *When God is expecting to accomplish his eternal plan through us, will he allow the Satan - the defeated foe to have power over his children who are created in his own image and for whom he sent his only Son to die on the cross for their sins?*

>> *Will God allow the Satan to destroy his children's life and soul?*
No. Never. Because every soul is precious to God! Hence God has not given Satan power over his children. Yes, Satan has no power over children of God!

SINNERS GIVE SATAN POWER OVER THEMSELVES.

It was explained earlier; how Satan enters our body and soul? To explain briefly; God burns around us as a wall of fire to protect us from the Satan. (Zech 2:5) We, live in our weakness for sin, are lured by the evil tricks, fall for temptations and commit sin. (James 1:14-15) When we commit sin 'with our will', we open-up our body for Satan. Yes, when we commit sin, we dig a hole in the wall of fire that is burning around us (Ezkl 12:11-12) and invite Satan in our life through the hole we dug for him by indulging in sin. Once he enters in our body he bind our soul with invisible chains. (Wis 17:17) Thus we become captives & refugees of Satan. ***This spiritual truth was explained in detail in the previous Chapter under the heading: "How does Satan enter our body and soul in spite of God's protection?"***

When Satan comes, he sows the seed of sin in our body and binds our soul with invisible chains. (Wis 17:17) Then he escapes through whole that we dug for him in the wall of fire (Ezkl 12:11-12). *When Satan enters our body, we become his captives. He takes control over us, abuses our body to commit sin repeatedly and we become his slaves. This is how Satan receives power over us. It is*

we, who give Satan power over us due to our weakness for sin and ignorance. Otherwise Satan has no power over children of God.

A believer should know that God has placed his blessing & curse, good & evil and life & death before us, for us to choose. He has also given us wisdom how to act wisely to inherit Kingdom of God & live righteous life. If we choose evil, heaven and earth will be witness for our choice. (Duet 30:1, 15 &19) *People who choose to do evil are the one who give Satan power over them.*

DOES GOD PERMIT SATAN TO HAVE POWER ON BELIEVERS?

At the same time if God wants to test a believer's faith, his endurance and his devotion to God, then God may permit Satan to have power over a believer to test him, 'only to the point of believer's strength to remain firm in faith'. (1 Cor 10:13) We read in the book-Job that; God permitted Satan to destroy Job's property, livestock and his body to test his faith and allegiance to him. (Job 1:1-12)

God permitted Satan to have power over Job. God said to Satan; "All right, everything Job has is in your power. But you must not kill Job."(Job 1:12) Job went through fire & flood. The Satan destroyed everything Job had so that he may give-up faith in God & abuse him. Job lost all his wealth, relations and finally lost his health. In all trials & tribulations Job remained faithful to God till the end. Because of his faithfulness, God blessed last part of Job's life in double measure in all that he lost. (Job 42:7-16)

Yes, unless God gives power to the Satan over a believer for a brief period to test his endurance & faith, the Satan cannot have power over us at all, unless we invite him in life and give him power over us by indulging in sin.

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO-8

ARE WE IGNORANT ABOUT THE POWER GIVEN TO US BY GOD?

FEAR LOOMS OVER MAN.

We fear Satan because we live in darkness of guilt and sin.

When sin enters our life, we fall short in love because in sin all our actions are based on selfish desires and greed. But if our actions are based on love, there will be no fear in us. The scriptures says: "There is no fear in love; perfect love drives away all fear. Love has not been made perfect in any one who is afraid, because fear has to do with punishment." (1 Jh 4:18) We live in fear because we are guilty of our sins and we are also ignorant on what God has spoken about us. We are ignorant on true knowledge about Christ.

Yes, we are ignorant about the spiritual powers that Christ has promised to his believers. The Satan has deceived our mind so that we may not believe in Christ's promises for power against the evil one. Such awful thing has happened to mankind because we do not rely on Word of God. We rely on our own understanding. (Prov 3:5) Hence, we do not dare to hope in the Lord and fight the Satan with Word of God to experience the power in his words. That is why fear is looming over human beings. But God said:

>> *"Use my words as sword to fight against Satan." (Eph 6:17)*

>> *"Use those words as weapons in order to fight well." (1 Tim 1:18)*

GOD HAS GIVEN US POWER OVER EVIL SPIRITS

King David said; "More than once I have heard God say that; power belongs to him and that his love is constant. (Ps 62:11) We receive God's love through his words, and God's power dwells in his Words. Yes, with his powerful words God created this universe, (Gen1:1-31) and by the power that dwells in his words God sustains this universe. (Heb1:3) God who created this universe by the power that dwells in his words and who sustains this universe by his powerful words made a covenant (agreement) with his children to give his power & word as we read below:

"I make a covenant with you: I have given you my power & teaching (his words) to be yours for ever and ever. From now on you have to obey me and teach your children and descendant to obey me for all time to come. (Is 59:21)

Jesus gave spiritual power to believers. He said;

>> *"I have given you authority to walk on snakes and scorpions (evil spirits) and to overcome the power of the enemy (Satan) and nothing can hurt you."*(Luk 10:19)

>> *"Believers are given power to perform miracles; they will drive out demons in my name; they will speak in strange tongues; if they pick up snakes or drink poison, they will not be harmed; they place hands on sick people who will get well".*(Mk 16:17-18)

>> *"Believers can bind the evil spirits with the authority given by Jesus who said; "whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven and whatever you set free on earth will be set free in heaven."*(Mat 18:18 & 16:18-19)

This is how Jesus spoke about Power & authority that he gave to believers against our enemy. These promises of God gives a clear message that God has given us spiritual powers & authority over evil spirits which he promised. We have not encountered this power because we are ignorant about this power. Hence we live in fear. The Satan uses our fear as powerful weapon to keep us as his slaves.

ARE WE USING THESE POWERS AND AUTHORITY?

How do we react when tribulation comes? Jesus said; "This world will make you suffer. But be brave and remain united with me. I have won this world". (Jh 16:33) Yes, we believers in Christ are bound to go through problems, because the world will make us suffer. Jesus said; if they persecute me, they will persecute you too, because you are my followers. (Jh 15:20) The problem is; when times of testing/ tribulations comes, how do we react? Do we fast & pray and ask God to give wisdom to tackle the problem with word of God? Or, do we handle problems with our wisdom & understanding?

In spiritual life, we cannot overcome temptations / tribulations unless we have 'sure faith' and 'wisdom from above'. Yes, our faith in Christ is the greatest power and mighty weapon against the Satan because; "faith in Christ and faith in Christ's words is our shield against the arrows that are shot by the evil one."(Eph 6:16) ***And, Wisdom from above, i.e., Wisdom of God (1 Cor 2:6-15) is the spiritual knowledge about purpose our existence on earth, and God's plan for us to work in the field of salvation to accomplish God's eternal plan. (Eph 1:9-10)***

This wisdom will give us understanding on what is happening in our spiritual life & in this spiritual world. God will give us

understanding on "where this world is heading to, at the end of times?" Such understanding will fill us with grace to endure sufferings for salvation of the Church, (Col 1:24) and resist the enemy's attack. After fighting till the end you will still hold your ground to stand firm in faith to win victory. (1 Cor 16:13 & Eph 6:13) The Scriptures says; "Who can win victory over this world? It is only a person who has faith in Christ." (1 Jh 4-5)

Dear believers; if you want to stand as witness to Christ, then you have to enrich your-self with Word of God to use it as powerful weapon against the evil one. We need to take example from Jesus. After he completed forty days fasting in the desert, Satan came to test him. For every test/proposal the Satan made to trap Jesus, he replied him with the word of God. (Mat 4:1-11)

When we are tempted / tested we should use right choice of Word of God for right occasion (Prov 15:23) to counter Satan, because Satan fears the Word of God for "Jesus is the Word of God".(Jh 1:14 & Rev19:13) When we resist Satan with God's Words, he will have no answer, hence he will run away from us. St James said; "Resist the devil, he will flee from you." (Jas 4:7) That's why we should be filled with word of God and use those Words as a sword against Satan, (Eph 6:17) in order to fight well. (1 Tim 1:18)

Faith in Christ & his Word are powerful weapons: Dear Believer, **"faith in Christ and in Words of Christ" are very powerful weapons against the evil spirits.** That's why St Paul said; "in your fight against Satan you should use those words in order to fight well'. (1 Tim 1:18) Yes, when we use God's words as powerful weapons to fight against powers of darkness, then the following promise will work to help us against satanic attacks. God's promised that; "I will lead my blind people through the roads that they have never travelled and turn their darkness into light."(Is 42:16)

Here in this promise, God said that we are blind, because, we are blind for God's power. God refers "the spiritual struggle (or) spiritual war against the powers of darkness" as the roads that we have never travelled. In this spiritual struggle we have to fight the evil spirits with God's words. When we use word of God to fight the evil spirits, we will experience God's power working in us to give us victory in the tests that we go through. This will open our eyes of faith for God's power and bring light in all dark areas in our life. Thus God's promise will be fulfilled and our faith will be renewed as prophet Isaiah said:"

"God strengthens those who are weak (in faith) and tired. (*Discouraged in spiritual life*) Even those who are young grow weak (*in faith*) young men can fall exhausted in spiritual life. But those who trust in the Lord for help will find their strength (*faith*) renewed. They will raise on wings like eagles. They will not get weary ;(*will not tried in spiritual life*) they will walk and not grow weak. (They will become strong in spiritual life - Is 40:29-31) *Here, God promises to renew our faith, strengthen us in our spiritual life and give "sure foundation in faith", when we hold on to him in constant reverence.*

DOES GOD PUT HIS CHILDREN TO TEST?

Yes, our faith will be put to test by God, because, Jesus himself was put to test in the desert. (Mat 4:1-4) In Bible we come cross many instance where God tested people for their endurance in faith. Three such instances are brought out here for us to understand how faithful people reacted to the test:

>> In the book 2 Maccabees we read that God permits a woman to be tested for her Faith. That a woman and her seven sons were tortured and killed by King Antiochus because they refused to give up their faith in the living God, and they refused to eat defiled food. The woman and her children did not hesitate to sacrifice their life to testify their faith in God. (2 Macc 7:1-42)

>> In the book Job, God permitted the Satan to test Job for endurance his faith. The Satan destroyed Job's wealth, health and family. (Job 1:1-12) But Job never gave up his faith in the living God even though he lost everything he had and his wife cursed him for his faithfulness to God. Finally God restored everything in double measure to Job. God blessed second part of Job's life. (Job 42:7-16)

>> In the Gospel of Luke we read that Jesus warned Peter; watch out and pray. He said; the Satan has taken permission to test all of you to separate good from the bad. (Luke 22:31)

>> King David said in his song that the Lord has tested his people. He said; *"You have put us to the test God as silver is purified by fire; so you have tested us. You let us fall into a trap and placed heavy burdens on our backs. You let our enemies trample over us. We went through fire and flood but now you have brought us to a place of safety". (Ps 66:10-12)* The above referred passages undoubtedly confirms that God puts his children to test.

WHY DOES GOD PUT PEOPLE TO TEST?

God chooses some people specially, whom he thinks that they are worthy of serving him. Such people are put to test and they go through fire & flood. But God remains with them in all their troubles /trials to protect them, guide them and lead them to accomplish his plan as we read that God promised Jacob, whom God named as Israel.(Gen 35:9-10) God said to him; "I will be with you to protect wherever you go, and I will bring you back to this land. I will not leave you until I have done all that I have promised you."(Gen 28:15)

Yes, God puts us to difficult tests because he wants to see our allegiance to him at times of tribulations. He wants to see whether we are confident, determined and show resolute firmness in faith and our loyalty to him. (Sir 2:1-6) *Scriptures give some examples on instances where people underwent such test, but displayed resolute firmness in faith and loyalty towards God as given below:*

Daniel: God allowed Daniel to be thrown in lion's pit. He remained there for seven days because he displayed resolute firmness in faith and loyalty towards God and not on idols or human beings. God was with Daniel till the end and rescued him. (Dan 6:1-28 & Bel 1-42)

Shadrach, Meshach & Abednego: God allowed these men of God to be tied & thrown in fire. Because they did not obey the King's order to worship the golden statue. They displayed resolute faith in God and were loyal to him even at the point of death. But, God was with them & rescued them from fire by sending an angle. (Dan 3:1-30)

Joseph: Joseph was thrown in a well by his brothers and left to die. God rescued him, he was taken to Egypt's palace. In the palace Joseph did not give himself for sinful desires of the Queen. Hence he was falsely accused by the Queen and thrown in prison. But, Joseph never lost faith in God. He displayed resolute firmness in faith. God was with him, rescued him and raised him to become the Governor of Egypt because he was righteous. He saved Egypt from famine which swept the country for seven years. (Gen Chapt 37 to 41)

Do you want to serve God? - Your faith will be put to test!

Our God says; *"My son, if you are going to serve the Lord (the Lord's call is there for everyone to serve him), be prepared for times when you will be put to test. Be sincere and determined. Keep calm when trouble (Temptation) comes. Stay with the Lord never abandon on him".* (Sir 2:1-3)

The Lord assures of his help to the righteous. He said:

>> *Has the Lord ever disappointed anyone who has put his hope in him?*

>> *Has the Lord ever abandoned anyone who held him in his constant reverence?*

>> *Has the Lord ever ignored who has prayed to him? (Sir2:10)*

>> *The Lord assures that he will be faithful to his promises. He said "I will never leave you; I will never forsake you" (Heb 13:5)*

WILL GOD PROVIDE A WAY OUT?

When God allows us to go through such hard tests, he does not abandon us to our strength or our power to overcome these tests. When we are put to test, he also gives us grace to hold on to faith. God assurance that he will not test us beyond our capacity to resist the test and remain firm in faith. In times of such tribulations God promises to provide us a way out. He said: *"Every test you have experienced is the kind that normally comes to people. But, God keeps his promise. He will not allow you to be tested beyond your power to remain firm; at times you are put to test he will also give strength to endure it, and provide you with a way out."* (1 Cor 10:13)

Never get discouraged when you go through struggle: *Dear believers, are you the one going through series of tribulations in life and you feel that God has abandoned you. First, thank God for he has chosen you specially to share Christ's suffering. (Col1:24) Yes, we live righteous life, yet undergo many sufferings. The Lord says that our sufferings are what remains of Christ's sufferings on behalf of the Church for salvation (Col1:24). In such sufferings God does not leave us alone. He may cause us to suffer pain, but his mercy endures forever. He takes no pleasure in causing us grief or pain. (Lem 3:32-33). God bandages the wound he makes; his hand hurts, and his hand heals. (Job 5:18) For a brief moment God may forsake us, but with great compassion he will gather us. (Is 54:7) Yes, God's victorious right hand will be upon us to comfort us and to provide a way out in our sufferings. (Is 49:16) Dear believer, are you the one who live righteous life, yet go through many sufferings.*

Here are encouraging Words for you so that you may not lose hope and fall in faith:

>>> *"My son pay attention when the Lord corrects you, and do not be discouraged when he rebukes you. Because the Lord corrects everyone whom he accepts as a son" (Heb 12:5-6)*

>>“He has sent hardships on you to test you, so that he could bless you with good things.” (Duet 8:16)

>>“Happy is the person who remains faithful under trials, because when he succeeds in passing such test, he will receive his reward, the life, which God has promised to those who love him.”(Jas 1:12)

>>“God calls you sufferings / these tests as merciful disciplining; He test people as father tests his children to warn them.” (Wis 11:9-10)

>>“We have a High Priest - Jesus Christ, who was tested every way that we are, but did not sin”. (Heb 4:15)

>>“And now, Jesus Christ can help those who are tempted, because he himself was tempted and suffered”. (Heb 2:18)

>>“Do not let yourself be discouraged and give up. For, in your struggle against sin, you have not yet had to resist to the point of getting killed.” (Heb 12:3-4)

Dear believers in Christ, in our spiritual life, when we surrender our sins and live for God, he will give many sufferings for the sake of salvation of sinners. We must have mental maturity to understand this spiritual truth and accept these sufferings from the hands of God. In such sufferings we are sharing the sufferings of Christ. St Paul said; “Now I am happy about my sufferings for you, for by means of my physical sufferings, I am helping to complete what remains of Christ’s sufferings on behalf of his body, the Church.”(Col 1:24)

IS OUR ATTEMPT SINCERE TO GIVE UP SIN?

Jesus warned us four times. He said: “Be on guard and don’t let anyone deceive you.” (Mk 13: 5, 9, 23 & 34) Because “the Devil is roaming around like lion to devour God’s children. (1Pet 5:8) Further Jesus cautioned. He said; “Pray so that you may not fall for temptation and sin.”(Luk 22:40 & 46) But, are we praying to the Lord when we are tempted to commit sin? When temptation comes, when times of testing comes, what do we do? Do we look at the problem with fear and try to avoid or overcome it with our knowledge and strength? Or, do we look upon Christ who is aware of our problems, who is in full control of the situation, and pray to him to receive grace to remain calm to see through the problem victoriously in the way Christ defeated his enemy on the cross. The Lord says, “Resist Devil and he will run away from you.”(James 4:7) Are we sincerely taking the help of Christ to resist evil when we are tempted to commit sin?

The Satan cannot influence us unless we have consented for sin, or have invited him in our life because of our weakness. If we recall our past life when we indulged in sin, we may well realise

that, it was we who wanted that act of sin to happen in our life because we desired for its pleasures. When we were tempted and drawn to commit sin, we had option to pray & to take the help of Holy Spirit who is our helper to avoid that occasion. (Jh 14:16)

HOW DO WE REACT TO SITUATIONS?

In moments of temptations do we take help of the Holy Spirit?

Dear believers, instead of taking help of the Holy Spirit to overcome temptations and avoid sin, if we choose to yield for temptations and commit sin, the Satan will bind us with invisible chains which will inflict us with satanic attributes. Yes, the satan will fill us with his attributes such as; fear, pride, jealousy, lust, greed, enmity, revenge, uncontrollable anger, evil habits, sinful relations, sinful worship, forbidden relations etc. He will cause great disturbances in us by taking away peace, joy, & will plant hatred, doubt, sadness, depression, inhuman behaviour, cruelty, loss of control over our feelings & over our passions. People will lose control over themselves and their actions will be based on greed and selfish desires.

At this juncture if we don't turn to God with fasting and prayer, we will sink deep in sin. Sin once committed gives Satan an entry in our body & soul. Once sin enters, he will do what is natural to him. He will bind our body, soul with invisible chains and make us captives. He will abuse our body to commit sin repeatedly and introduce us to many others sins. We will become weak within ourselves and become a prisoner for evil thoughts, evil actions, evil habits, sinful relations and captive for crimes. **Thus we will become slaves for sin. Satan will rule over us.** There after every thought, action, decision, and our way of life will be based on sin. Satan will use us as instruments to draw many people into sinful life & form a sinner's club. The powers of darkness will take complete control over us to destroy our life. We will be living in darkness as prisoners & captives. We will become slaves for the ruling spirits of this universe. (Gal 4:3 & Col 2:8, 20)

IS POWER OF SIN COMPELLING US TO BE UNRIGHTEOUS?

Many times we tried to free ourselves from sinful habits or sinful relations or sinful ways of living. But we failed because the power of sin is so strong & intense in us that it rules over our weaknesses. Dear believers, you would have experienced many times that you did not want to commit that sin. But there was something within you forcing you to commit sin. St Paul explained this situation as '**conflict in man.**' This truth was explained earlier.

Yet, to refresh the believer's memory, this truth is brought out here again. St Paul explains the truth, thus;

*>> "I do not understand what I do, for I don't do what I would like to do. But instead, I do what, I hate. Since what I do is what I don't want to do, this shows that I agree that the Law is right. So I am not really the one who does these things; rather it is the sin that lives in me. I know that good does not live in me, that is, in my human nature. For even though the desire to do good is in me, I am not able to do it. I do not do good that I want to do, instead I do the evil that I do not want to do. If I do what I don't want to do, this means that I am no longer the one who does it; instead, it is the sin that lives in me." (Rom 7:15-20) **This is how the power of sin will take control over us and compels us to commit sin repeatedly against our wish and keeps us as slaves of sin to live unrighteous life.***

Burden of sin will make people reject truth: St Paul said: "In the end of days, which the world is passing through presently, people will be selfish, greedy, boastful and conceited. They will be insulting and disobedient to their parents, ungrateful and irreligious; they will be unkind, merciless, slanderers, violent, and fierce; they will hate good; they will be treacherous, reckless, and swollen with pride; they will love pleasure than God. **People will hold to an outward form of religion and reject the real power.** Keep away from them. They will go into people's house and gain control over weak women who are burdened by their guilt of their sins and driven by all kind of desires. Women who are always trying to learn, but can never come to know of truth. (2 Tim 3:1-7) In the last days people will be lost in sin. They will reject Christ, to follow their heart's fantasies and bodily desires.

ARE WE BOUND BY INVISIBLE CHAIN?

Sin holds every one as prisoners, and captives in the darkness: From the above it is very clear that the power of sin holds every one as prisoners, and captives in the darkness as explained in the book Wisdom of Solomon, where King Solomon said; "farmers, shepherds and labourers out in the countryside (everyone on this earth) were captured by the same inevitable fate (power sin) and are bound in the darkness by the same invisible chain."(Wis 17:17)

These invisible chains bind our body and soul. They make us slaves and force us to commit sin repeatedly so that we remain as slaves of sin and sink deep in sin. These invisible chains needs to be broken. Who will break these chains? *Human power and human*

wisdom is not sufficient to break these chains because Jesus said; "human power is of no use at all,(Jh 6:63) because human flesh is weak. (Mat 26:41) Jesus said; the words I have spoken brings God's life-giving Spirit (power) to make man to live". (Jn 6:63)

King Solomon said; "Wisdom is a breath of God's power, a pure and radiant stream of glory from the almighty. She is the reflection of eternal light, a perfect mirror of God's activity and goodness."(Wis 7:25-26) We need this power from above. Hence Jesus said; "You can't do anything on your own. Be united with me. All things will be made possible for you, for I have conquered this world."(Jh 15:4-7) **God assures power to break these chains.** God Said; "More than once I have heard God say that power belongs to him and that is his constant love."(Ps 62:11) So we need this power to fight against the evil bondage and to set ourselves free. But how do we receive this power? God says that; "his power is his constant Love".

His power is his presence around us. St Paul says; "Wherever the Spirit of the Lord's is, there is freedom. (2 Cor 3:17) "The presence of God's Spirit assures freedom from our sinful-self. Our evil bondages, weaknesses evil desires, our willingness to commit sin, our desires to lure others to commit sin and every kind of worldly afflictions. In other words the Spirit of the Lord breaks the power of invisible chains that are binding us and compelling us to commit sin.

The Spirit of God, the Spirit of Jesus sets us free. Yes, "Freedom is what we have. Christ ha set us free (Gal 5:1) Stand then as free people. Do not allow yourselves to become slaves again. We have the privilege of being God's free people. Do not surrender your glorious privilege of being God's free people. (Baruch 4: 3-4)

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO-9

HOW DO WE RECEIVE THE POWER FROM ABOVE?

The understanding from the previous Chapter is very clear that we can overcome our weakness to commit sin only by receiving "God's_Power" and making God's presence in us as a permanent experience. St Peter said; *"My brothers try even harder to make God's call and his choice of you a permanent experience; if you do so, you will never fall in faith."*(2 Pet 1:10) Here St Peter said that we are chosen children of God. And God calls every one of us live in his presence at all time (or) make his presence in our life as a permanent experience. **The questions here are:**

1. How do we receive God's power?
2. How can we make God's presence as permanent experience?

Question-1: HOW DO WE RECEIVE GOD'S POWER?

The answer is lies in the Word of God which says; "Before the world was created the WORD already existed, the WORD was with God and, the WORD itself was God". (Jh 1:1) This gives an understanding that God is present in his words (or) "God dwells in his Words". If God dwells in his words, then, we discern that God's power also dwells in his words, as per the above Word of God. If God's power dwells in his words, his power also dwells in us. Because, since young age we did hear many readings of Scriptures and sermons. We also read Bible in personal life, may be daily. So we know many Words of God, and these words what he heard and what read in Bible remain in our lips, in our hearts and in our mind. And hence God's power abides in us. ***But knowing the Words of God, remembering the Words of God, speaking the Word of God with our friends, siblings, and people has not helped us in our spiritual life to set ourselves free from the power of sin which is ruling us. Yes, we are not able to overcome our sinful-self which is sinking us deep in sin. Now what do we do?***

WHAT IS THE ANSWER? WHERE IS THE SOLUTION?

The solution is given in the Word of God given below; "Christ's message (Words of Christ) in all its richness must live in our hearts" so that the richness in the word of God will help us to free ourselves from the power of sin. It will help us to overcome our sinful-self. (Col

3:16) Here our God says that "the message of Christ (Words of Christ) must live in our hearts in all its richness. This richness/power will deliver us from all our sinful bondages and spiritual bondages.

Dear believer, though you know many words of God by heart, those words have not helped you to change your sinful life. Those words have not helped to overcome your sinful-self. Because, you have not accepted God's Words whole heartedly in faith & humbleness that; "God has spoken those words for my good life" and that "these Words are meant for me and I will obey the words". Unless you accept Jesus Christ as your personal saviour, establish a personal relation and accept that he is speaking to you like a father to correct you (Is 30:20-21) to punish you, (Heb 12:5-6) to guide you, (Wis 18:3) to counsel you, (Is 9:6-7) to lead you (Is 42:16) and to protect you (Ps 121:1-8), Word of God will not do any good to you. In such personal relation Jesus calls for obedience to God's words. He said; "Blessed are those who hear the word of God and obey it". (Luk 11:28)

God said; "They heard the Good News. But it did not do anything good to them. Because, when they heard it they did not accept it with faith." (Heb 4:2) Yes, in faith we have not accepted that God has spoken these Words for us to live a holy life. For God said; "Repent and turn away from your sins, for the Kingdom of God is at hand." (Mat 3:2) We have not accepted God's words in faith and obeyed it. **For God said; "I will show love to thousands of generations of those who love me and obey me." (Ex 20:6)** We have not accepted his words in faith to live life day-by-day trusting his Words. For his words says; "As for you, Christ has poured his Spirit on you. As long as the Spirit remains in you, you do not need anyone to teach you. For his Spirit teaches you about everything, and what he teaches is true not false. Obey the Spirit then and remain in union with Christ," (1 John 2:27) because, "His word is a guide to our feet and light in our path" (Ps 119:105)

But, we fail to retain words of God in our mind and hence we lose life and healing. For his words says; "Pay attention to what I say my son. Listen to my words. Never let them to get away from you. Remember them and keep them in your heart. They will give life and health to anyone who understand them." (Prov 4:20-22) *To experience the richness (power) in God's words we should meditate on his words (Sir 6:37) with a desire to understand its spiritual truths abiding in it, by reading his words early in the morning before sunrise between three O'clock and six O'clock. If we sacrifice our early morning sleep to seek the face of the Lord and read his words, (Wis*

6:12-21) then God will give us grace to understand the richness in his Words and experience the power in his living Words. (Ps 62:11) In humbleness if we obey God's Words which we read, then his Words will abide in us with its richness and power. (Is 57:15)

WHAT IS THE RICHNESS IN THE WORD OF GOD?

We know that this world and everything in it including human beings were created by the 'Power' that dwells in God's Words. (Gen 1:1-27) Also we know that the whole universe is sustained by the power that dwells in the God's Word.(Heb1:3) This "Power" is the richness which is hidden in the Word of God. By using the power in the Word of God we are not going to create anything for God has already created everything that we need. All that we need to know and understand is; "how to use the power that dwells in Word of God to set ourselves free from the power of sin to live life in all its fullness. (Jh 10:10) Yes, it is important for us to understand how to use the power in the Word of God to fight the power of sin to get rid of our sinful-self. Jesus said; "Human power is not sufficient to set ourselves free from the power of sin". He cautioned his followers and said: "What gives life is God's Spirit. Human power is of no use at all. The words I have spoken (which are filled with richness and power) brings God's life-giving Spirit in you". (Jh 6:63) ***The richness in God's words is the 'Fruits of the Holy Spirit'. The fruits of the Spirit are: love, joy, peace, patients, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, humility and self-control.***

DO YOU REALISE RICHNESS & POWER IN WORD OF GOD?

Dear believer, just knowing word of God is of no use at all. Unless you accept his words with faith in, obey it, and put the words into practice, you will not be able to experience richness and power that dwells in the words. Faith is paramount importance for you to proceed in this spiritual journey. St Paul said; "They heard Good News just as we did. But it did 'no good' to them because when they heard the word they did not receive it with faith."(Heb 4:2) In faith, if you worship God between 3 and 6 A M, which is the right time for worship, (Wis 6:12-21) and read Bible kneeling down, and spend time in 'Praise & Worship', God will give you 'Wisdom' & 'Insight' on the Richness (fruits of Spirit- Gal 5:22) & on the Power (Gifts of Spirit 1 Cor 12:8-11) abiding in his words. First God will bless you with peace. (Promise of Jesus in Jh 14:27) You will experience presence of Jesus in your worship because he will come to you and reveal himself as he came to the disciples walking on

water somewhere between 3 & 6 AM when the disciples were struggling at the ore in middle of the sea and gave them peace. (Mark 7:45-51) This peace will calm down all the problems that are troubling you. Then God will bless you with the Spirit of Wisdom.

This Spirit of Wisdom will give you understanding on spiritual truths (Wis 7:22-29) abiding in Scriptures. Yes, Jesus will open your mind to understand spiritual truths in Scriptures as he opened the minds of his disciples to understand Scriptures after resurrection. (Luk 24:36-45) This understanding will give you knowledge on the richness and power that are dwelling his words. Further, if you obey the word of God, and put his words & your faith in to practice, you will experience power working in you, for God said; "put all things to test" to see the power at work, (1 Thess 5:21) for God will work in you who believe. (1 Thess 2:13) Your early morning worship and obedience to Word of God will enlighten you on its richness which are fruits of the Holy Spirit. When you experience such spiritual encounter, the fruit of the Spirit (richness) will give you 'Power' to overcome your desires & weaknesses which are causing us to commit sin repeatedly. In your obedience to his words, God will open your eyes for faith and mind for Scripture and you will experience that the Word of God is working in you.

Now let us understand how the Richness (fruits of Spirit) will work in us to give Power to overcome our weaknesses.

In humbleness if you worship God before sunrise every day, read his words regularly in the morning and in the evening, as God said; "Do your sowing in the morning and in the evening, too," (Ecc:11:6) then, God's words which is fire & a hammer will break all your negative attributes, weaknesses and bondages. God said; "my word is fire and a hammer that breaks rocks in to pieces". (Jer 23:29) God's words will transform our disobedient mind and hardened heart. Yes, God promises to those who worship him before sunrise that; "I will give you a new heart and new mind. I will take away your stubborn heart of stone and give you obedient heart". (Ezkl 36:26)

THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL TRANSFORM YOUR INNER-BEING

The power in God's words will transform you inwardly by a complete change of mind, there by your mind will be changed in to a humble and obedient mind. (Rom 12:1-2) *This transformation is called as "circumcision of heart" which is done by Christ himself through which we are freed from our sinful-self. (Col*

2:11) In this spiritual transformation, you get freedom from your 'old sinful being', because the Creator will form a 'new righteous being' in you. This is a new being which the Creator, is making in you by constantly renewing his own image in you to in order to bring you to full knowledge of himself"(Col 3:10) God spoke about this transformation through Prophet Ezekiel. **God said;** "I will use you to show the nations that I am holy.(God will demonstrate his holiness through you) I will take you from every nation and country (he will deliver you from all your sins/bondages) & bring you back to your own land.(he will purify your body, spirit and soul & make you holy) I will sprinkle clean water on you (he will anoint us with Holy Spirit) and make you clean from all idols and everything else that has defiled you.(fruits of Spirit will cleanse you)" (Ezkl: 36:23-25)

This is how we will be transformed in our inner-being. The power of Holy Spirit will help us to get rid of our sinful-self and transform us in to a new creation. We will experience this freedom which Christ has promised. He said; freedom is what we have -Christ has set us free. Do not allow this freedom to make you slaves again."(Gal 5:1)

Now let us understand how the fruits of the Holy Spirit will transform our inner-being.

Love: This fruit 'Love' which dwells in God's words will refresh our mind, remove all our selfish desires which is are the cause for hatred, enmity vengeance, revenge, lust, greed, betrayal, and every crime. **This love will sow the seed of selflessness in the human heart which will unite people to gather as one community as God's children.** (Ps133:1-3) We will be able to love one another as we love ourselves. (Mat 22:39)

Joy: This fruit 'Joy' which dwells in God's words will burn up our sadness, loneliness, depression, timid, introvert feeling, negative attitudes, guilt & rejection. These are the satanic infliction that deceives our mind and makes us to live in gloom. Thus we lose joy in heart. But joy that Spirit produces will make us to rejoice in joy of the Lord every moment in life. (Phil 4:4) God said; **"Be joyful always, pray continually and give thanks in all circumstances for this is what is God's will for you in Christ Jesus."** (1 Thess 5:16-18)

Peace: This fruit 'Peace' which dwells in God's words will remove "restlessness /disturbance" in our mind which is causing all anxiety resulting in bad health. **God's peace will help to heal mental ailments.**

Further this peace will help us to make correct decision on important issues in life. (Col 3:15) This peace will bring harmony in our relation within family, within societies and amongst Nations. God's peace which is far beyond human understanding will keep our heart and mind safe in union with Jesus Christ. (Phil 4:7) We will be able to enjoy presence of God in us and with people around us. Jesus has promised that: "Peace is what I leave with you; it is my own peace I give you. I do not give as the world does. (Jh 14:27) The peace that Christ gives cannot be taken away by any power on earth.

Patience: This fruit 'Patience' which dwells in God's words will produce endurance in us there-by we will be able to overcome our trials and tribulations. (Heb 10:32-36 & 2 Cor 6:3-4) **Patience will help us become strong in faith and receive sure foundation in spiritual life. (1 Pet 5:10)** Patience will also help us to overcome uncontrollable anger which destroys our blessings. Patience will help us to tolerate one another / accept one another in our short comings, (Rom 15:7) there by, patience will bring harmony in the family and society. (Ps 133:1-3) Patience will produce peace in us and around us.

Kindness: This fruit 'Kindness' which will produce politeness which will give us grace to give up our rude behaviour and harsh actions. This fruit will give us grace to be kind in words, merciful in actions and magnanimous in attitude. Such attitude will unite people to gather and make them to live in love. Jesus said; "It is kindness I want, not animal sacrifice. I have not come to call the respectable people, but the outcast." (Mat 9:13, 12:7, Hos 6:6)

Goodness: This fruit 'Goodness' which dwells in God's words will help us to forgive our enemies, to love our enemies and pray for them. By being good we will be able to avoid anger, enmity, vengeance, revenge. This attitude will unite people and help them to live healthy life. For Jesus said 'forgive one another as I have forgiven you.'(Mat 6:12, Col 3:13) Further he said; "Forgiving your offender seven times seventy. (Mat 18:21-22) It means by our goodness we can forgive our offenders endlessly. God will give us grace through the power of Holy Spirit to forgive our offenders in this manner.

Faithfulness: This fruit 'Faithfulness' which dwells in God's words will give us grace to strengthen our faithfulness to God in our trials and tribulations. Also this fruit will give us courage / grace to remain faithful to our spouse in fidelity, to remain faithful to our employer and servants in loyalty, and to remain faithful to our society and Country in protecting its sovereignty. (1 Pet 1:6-8 & Heb 3:12-13)

Humility: This fruit 'Humility' which dwells in God's words will make us to give up our pride which God hates. This fruit will help us to surrender our will for God's will. When we surrender our will to God, he will give us grace to discern his plan for us through faith. (1 Tim 1:4) In humbleness if we surrender our sins, God will use us as his instrument in God's work for salvation. (2 Tim 2:21-22) Humility will also remove pride & enmity and bring harmony in family, friends and in society. When we humble ourselves before God, he is highly pleased with us. *For God said; "I want people to live in humble fellowship with me". (Micah 6:8) "I live among people who are humble and repentant". (Is 57:15) "I will lift up people who are humble at my own time". (1 Pet 5:6)*

Self-control: This fruit 'Self-control' which dwells in God's words will greatly strengthen our inner-self to overcome all our sinful desires and weaknesses. Thus it will help us to reject sin in all its forms. This fruit self-control will fill us with grace which will help us to exercise control over our senses/ passions/ weaknesses which are causing us to indulge sin repeatedly. *It will gives us grace & power to exercise control over our mind, over our eyes, over our desires, over our tongue, over our actions, over our feet and will bring discipline in our spiritual life, in our physical life, in our marital life and in our worship. (Jh 4:23-24) This discipline in our spiritual life, physical life, martial life and in our worship is referred as the Sure Foundation by St Peter in 1 Pet 5:10. **Further God said; "If you will discipline your thoughts and be willing to learn, you will be kept safe in this life and will be granted mercy after death."**(2 Esdras 14:34)*

DO YOU EXPERIENCE FULLNESS OF CHRIST IN YOU?

When Christ's Words lives in your heart with all its richness, power & glory, his words will become light to your path and guide to your feet. (Ps 119:105) Even when you go through a valley of death, you can hear his voice guiding you from behind. (Ps 23:4) When you worship Christ early in the morning before sunrise, Jesus who awaits for your worship will establish a personal relation with you. It is a "One-to-One" relation where he will speak to you through his words to guide you, to hold your hand and lead you. You will experience his presence in your life and hear his voice guiding you in path that you should go as Scriptures says: *"The Lord will make you to go through hard times, but he himself will be there to teach you, and you will not have to search for him anymore. If you wander off the road to your right or left, you will hear his voice from behind saying; "Here is the road. Follow it". (Is 30:20-21)*

Christ will anoint you with Holy Spirit: At this juncture, if you surrender your will to God's will and obey everything that the Lord commands in your worship unconditionally, Christ will give you freedom / deliverance from all your evil bondages and afflictions. You will be anointed with the Holy Spirit which will give you an experience of "Fullness life in Christ" with-in you as written Col 2:6-19. (You are advised to read this passage for good understanding on 'fullness of life in Christ') **Yes, Christ said "listen; I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come into his house and eat with him, and he will eat with me."** (Rev 3:20) The meaning of these words is; "Christ wants to make his home in our heart and live with us in every area of our life".

Make a choice to accept Jesus as your personal Saviour: *Are you willing to open the doors of your heart for Christ sincerely and allow him to have full control in every area of your life?* Then you will experience how his words works in you powerfully in all its richness and power to deliver you, strengthen you in all your weakness so that you can reject sin in all its forms. Also Christ will give you "Sure Foundation" in faith and in spiritual life, to make you live a life pleasing to God. (Rom 12:1-2) **The message is very clear my dear believer. Christ wants to come into every area & situation in your life to help you, guide you, lead you, protect you and bless you. Are you inviting Christ in every area and in every situation of your life?**

We need God's grace to surrender: This calls for total surrender. Or, are you allowing Christ only to certain areas of your life and trying to live life with your small worldly wisdom in rest of the areas in your life? When you totally surrender your mind to the Lord, and accept his words with all sincerity and obey him, his power will work in you with all its glory and richness. The power in the fruits of Spirit will deliver you from all your bondages and give freedom from all your weaknesses which are causing you to sin repeatedly. If you do, then, all his promises for you will be fulfilled in you because our Lord is faithful in all his promises. (2 Tim 2:13).

So to experience the power in God's word we have to receive and accept the Word of God with faith and obey his words in all sincerity in complete surrender, in all situations of life. (Heb 4:2) It means we have to give Christ complete control over us & live life day by day obeying his words (Luk 11:28) and inspired message for God said; "Do not restrain the Holy Spirit. Do not despise inspired messages". (1 Thess 5:19-20)

Question-2

HOW CAN WE MAKE GOD'S PRESENCE AS A PERMANENT EXPERIENCE IN OUR LIFE?

We know that in this earthly life we are not fighting against human beings, but we are fighting against the wicked spiritual forces of the heavenly world, the rulers, and authorities of the heavenly world and cosmic powers of the Dark Age. (Eph 6:12) These are the deceiving spirits for which human beings fall as easy victims and become their slaves. These wicked spirits of very powerful and hence we cannot fight against them with human power and strength. That's why Jesus said; "What give life is God's Spirit. Man's power is of no use at all". (Jh 6:63) Before he underwent his passions again Jesus said; "the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."(Mat 26:41) That's why St Paul said; to fight against the evil spirits we must use God's Armour.

He said; "Put on God's armour now! Then when the evil days come you will be able to resist its attacks and after fighting to the end you will be able to hold your ground". (Ephesians 6:12-18)

The armour of the Lord are:

- 1- Truth:** as waist belt. (Scriptures refers Jesus as truth)
- 2- Righteousness** as Breast plate. (Living in obedience to God)
- 3- Good News** as shoes. (Be ready to announce the Gospel)
- 4- Faith** as shield (to put down burning arrows of evil one)
- 5- Salvation** as helmet (Never lose faith and hope in salvation)
- 6- Word of God as sword** (as double edged sword to fight evil)

*How to use God's armour as weapons to fight Satan is explained in Chapter No 13 (refer page 145) for deeper understanding. **We cannot use God's Armour unless we grow deep in spiritual life & make God's presence as "permanent experience" in life.***

We can grow deep and strong in spiritual life to make God's presence as permanent experience by Practicing following exercises.

Excercise-1: *Devote all your time to study the Lord's commandments and meditate on them. (Sir 6:37) God said to Joshua; "Be sure that the book of the Law is always read in your worship. Study it day and night and make sure that you obey*

everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful. (Joshua 1:8) *If you practice this exercise sincerely God will open your mind for "Wisdom & Insight" on Scriptures which will greatly help in your fight against enemy the Satan.*

Excercise-2: Live with Christ's Words in all its richness in your heart. (Col 3:16) *If Christ's words lives in your heart with all its richness you will enjoy the power of fruits of Holy Spirit. This power will strengthen your inner-being and help you to overcome all your sinful desires and weaknesses which are causing you to indulge in sin repeatedly. The fruits of the spirit will give you the grace to reject sin in all its forms. This practice will, help you to get rid of "your sinful-self" which comprises of sinful habits, sinful relations, sinful practices, sinful worship and any other sins that are holding you as a salve, and give you sure foundation in spiritual life.*

Excercise-3: Always sing psalms, hymns, and sacred songs with thanks giving in your heart. (Col 3:16) *If you make it a habit to sing the Lord's praises every day in your worship, and allow your mind to dwell on these sacred hymns, during day time, you will experience continual deliverance from all your anxieties, temptations, weaknesses, sinful desires, and urge to commit sin. Because the Lord who dwells in your praises, (Ps 22:3) he will break the power of sin over you. He said; "Now I will end the power of Assyrians over you and break the chains that bind you." (Nahum 1:12-13) Yes, God will give freedom in your heart and mind. (Gal 5:1). When you sing Spiritual songs, you will always be surrounded by angels. The Spirit of God will move around you. The scriptures says; "Wherever the Spirit of the Lord is, there is deliverance / freedom from all evil inflictions and bondages". (2 Cor 3:17) This is how singing God's praises will help to overcome your sinful-self.*

Excercise-4: Do everything in the name of Lord Jesus. (Col 1:17) *When you do everything in the name of the Lord, he will blesses all your actions as God told Abraham that he will bless all that he does.(Gen 24:1) When you do everything in the name of the Lord, you honour the Lord in your actions and glorify him in life. When you glorify God, you will experience God's hand upon you to protect you. For God said; "Jerusalem; you are my people! I have given you my teachings and I will protect you with my hand. (Is 51:16)Yes, he will protect you from the snares of the evil one.*

Excercise-5: Avoid sin to gain Lord's favour.(1 Pet 1:15) *If you avoid sin you will glorify God's Spirit in your body. (1 Cor 6:19-20)*

*When you sin you invite evil spirits in your body and soul. Evil spirits come to destroy all your blessings for Jesus said; "the thief comes in order to steal, kill and destroy"(Jh 10:10) By sinning you go away from the saving presence of the Lord. (Rom 3:23) Sin becomes a barrier between you and God. For God said; "Don't think that the Lord is too weak to save you or too deaf to hear your call for help. It is because of your sins that he doesn't hear you. It is your sin that separate you from God when you try to worship him. You are guilty of lying, violence and murder."(Is 59:1-2) **But, when you repent sincerely for your sins & reject sin, you please God and gain his favour. (Joel 2:12-28 & Jon 3:1-10)***

Excercise-6: Honour Wisdom, so that you can rule over evil spirits for ever. (Wis 6:21) Honouring wisdom means:

1. To place God above all things: *It is to worship God before sun rise for Jesus said; "Search for the Kingdom of God above all things. Rest all will be added to you" (Mat 6:33 & Wis 6:12-21)*

2. To obey Word of God and inspired messages, *without doubting for Jesus said; "Blessed are the one who hear the word and obey it".(Luk11:28) St Paul; "Do not restrain the Holy Spirit. Do not despise the inspired messages. Put all things to test; keep what is good and avoid every kind of evil". (1 Thess 5:19-22)*

3. To consult the Lord in all your important decisions: *King David consulted God in all his major decisions. Before he attacked Philistines he consulted the Lord, and the Lord gave him victory. (1 Chronicles 14:8-17) When you fast and pray for deciding on a particular issue, God will guide you to take right decision. And the decision that you take in this manner will come from the Lord himself. (Duet 1:17) God will give you peace in such decisions. (Col 3:15)*

In Changed life you will experience freedom: (Ezkl 47:8-9) *By living in this manner you enrich God's presence permanently in your life. In his presence you will always experience deliverance from all evil inflictions & freedom from all fears which makes you to fall in faith. (2 Cor 3:17)*

YOU WILL EXPERIENCE CONTINEOUS FLOW OF GOD'S SPIRIT IN YOU

Prophet Ezekiel said: *When the water flows in Dead Sea (when the Spirit of God flows in your body & soul) it replaces the salt water of that sea with fresh water. (It takes away your fear which causes us to fall in faith and gives sure foundation in faith) Where ever the*

water flows there will be all kind of animals and fish. (The presence of Holy Spirit will produce the fruits and gifts of the Holy Spirit in you. (Gal 5:22 & 1 Cor 12:7-11) The stream from heaven will make the water of the Dead Sea fresh. (When Spirit of God flows in you, your spiritual life will be renewed day-by-day. (2 Cor 4:7) Where ever the Spirit of God flows it will bring life. (Ezkl 47:8-9) You will experience life in all its fullness, (Jh10:10) because Jesus said; "The words I have spoken brings God's Life-Giving Spirit in to you"(Jh 6:63)

THE LORD WILL TRANSFORM YOU AS A WALL OF BRONZE

When you enrich yourself with Spirit of God / Spirit of Wisdom you will receive the Life Giving-Spirit of Jesus which will strengthen your heart & mind in all your troubles and tribulations. (Phil 4:7) you will never fall in faith. You will live life in all its fullness. (Jh 10:10).

If you honour Wisdom in this manner, the Lord will transform you as a wall of Bronze against evil spirits. They will fight against you, but they will not win over you because your God will be with you to protect you and give victory. (Jer 15:19-20) Yes, our God will fight for you because the battle belongs to the Lord. (2 Chronicles 20:15 & 1 Samuel 17:47) You will win victory not by your power or by your military might, but by the power of Spirit of the Lord. (Zech 4:6-7)

This is how you can make God's presence as a permanent experience in life and win victory over the Demonic forces.

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO -10

WHY DO WE SIN AGAIN AND AGAIN?

HAVING DELIVERED FROM EVIL BONDAGE, WHY ARE WE FALLING IN TO THE SAME SINFUL BONDAGE (or) SOME OTHER SINFUL BONDAGE AGAIN & AGAIN?

We must know that in this world we are not fighting against human beings but we are fighting against evil spirits. The wicked spiritual forces in the heavenly world as St Paul said; *"We are not fighting against the human being but against the wicked spiritual forces in the heavenly world. The rulers, authorities, and cosmic power of the dark age".(Eph 6:12)*

ARE WE AWARE OF THE BLESSINGS THAT ARE PROMISED?

These evil spirits does not allow children of God to live a life free from sin to enjoy love, joy peace, good health, and every other blessings that God has promised to his children. Yes. God has promised many blessings to mankind. Some of those promises for blessings are listed below:

Blessing promised for honouring the Lord: God said; *"If you worship me the Lord your God, I will bless you with food, water and take away all your illness. In your land no women will have miscarriage or be without children and I will give you long life".(Ex 23:25)* *"I will show love to thousands of generations of those who love me and obey my laws". (Ex 20:6)*

Blessing promised for obedience to God: Believers are advised to read Duet 28:1-14, Lev 26:3-13,& Duet 7:12-24 to understand the blessings that are promised to children of God in obedience to teachings of the Scriptures.

Blessing promised for good life: God said; *"I will make an eternal covenant with them. I will never stop doing good things for them. I will take pleasure in doing good things for them, and I will establish them permanently in this land". (Jer 32:40-41)*

Blessing promised in repentance: **When we repent for our sins by fasting and prayer God promises that;** *"I will give you back what you have lost in the years when swarms of locust ate your*

crops. It was I who sent this army against you (because of your sins). Now you will have plenty to eat and be satisfied (for you have repented) you will praise the Lord your God, who has done wonderful things for you. My people will never be despised again". (Joel 2:25-26, 2 Kgs 20:1-11 & Is 38:1-9)

Blessing promised for a good future: God said; "I alone know the plan I have for you; plans to bring prosperity not disaster. Plans to bring about the future you hope for."(Jer 29:11) In his eternal plan God promised believers that they will be one family with Christ as its head as the Scriptures says; "God will fulfil his "Eternal Plan" at the right time and bring all creation to gather everything in heaven and earth, with Christ as head.(Eph 1:10)

Blessing promised for trusting/having faith in God: God said; "I will bless a person who puts his trust on me. He is like a tree growing near a stream, sending out roots to the water. It is not afraid when hot weather comes, because its leaves stay green; it has no worries when there is no rain: it keeps on bearing fruits.(Jer 17:7-8)

Blessing promised to turn a curse in to a blessing: The Lord will not listen to Balaam: instead he turned the curse into a blessing, because he loves you (Duet 23:5 & Neh 13:2-3). We will win Lord's favour if we repent and change our life, in total surrender with fasting and prayer. God will change our curses into blessings. (to understand this spiritual truth please read the book Esther Chapters 1 to 10)

Blessing promised for spiritual gifts: The Scriptures says; "Out of fullness of his grace he has blessed us all, giving us one blessing after other."(Jh1:16) "Yes, blessing is what God promised to give when he called you". (1 Pet 3:9) To those who believe & accept his word as truth in faith, God reveals the richness & power that dwell in his words which is a great blessing. These blessings are fruits of the Holy Spirit. (Gal 5:22) And gifts of the Holy Spirit. (1 Cor 12:7 -11)

Blessing promised for eternal life: Christ promised; "I am the resurrection and the life. Whoever believes in me will live even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die."(Jh 11:25)

Yes, Salvation comes from the Lord, because Christ is the Lord of Salvation (Jh 3:16-17, Jonah 2:9) Salvation is found his Name alone; in all the world there is no one else whom God has given who can save us. "(Acts4:12) Christ is the one who arranges a new

covenant, so that those who have been called by God may receive the eternal blessing that God has promised. (Heb 9:15)

DO WE LOSE OUR BLESSINGS DUE TO SIN?

Satan will lure us to commit sin and steal our blessings.

God has decreed that; only in obedience to his Law man will inherit "God's Blessings" as we read in Deuteronomy 28:1-14 and Leviticus 26:3-13. Further he pronounces judgement on those who disobey his Law saying; "man will lose his blessings in disobedience" as we read in Deuteronomy 28:15-68 and Leviticus 26:14-46. **Dear believers, anyone whose sins have been forgiven is delivered from sinful bondage. He is set free from invisible chains that were binding him. (Wis 17:17) Now he is a free person.** (Is 49:7-10 & Ps 107:10-22) He enjoys Joy of the Lord & freedom in mind and body. Also God restores all blessings that he lost in disobedience. (Joel 2:12-28)

But the devil who is jealous about God's blessings for men, always works against God's will. (Wis 2:23-24) He does not like to see a person rejoicing in the Lord's blessings. So he lures him in many ways to cause him to fall again, so that he will commit sin and lose God's blessings in disobedience and live in misery. The Satan will come in different forms to lure us to commit sin.

That's why Jesus warned us four times and said; "Be on guard, do not be deceived." (Mark 13:5, 9, 23 & 35) So we have to be very careful not to be deceived by the evil tricks again.

St Peter warned us and said; *"My brother, try even harder to make God's call and his choice of you a permanent experience. If you do so, you will never (fall in sin) abandon your faith."* (2 Pet 1: 10) *How to make God's presence as permanent experience in life has been explained in detail in the previous chapter. Having experienced richness in Christ Words, and having delivered from sins and bondages, we must be even more careful in spiritual life, because the Satan is always roaming around to deceive God's chosen people to devour them and make them fall so that they will lose God's blessings.* (1 Pet 5:8)

God warns us; "Do not surrender your glorious privilege": A person whose sins have been forgiven, is set free from invisible chains that were binding him. He is a free person. But if he is lured by devil and commits sin again knowing the consequence of sin, his

condition would be much worse than what he was before. *Jesus warned that we should not lose the privilege of being God's free people. When we sin the Satan binds us with invisible chains.* Yes, after healing a sick man who was lying near the pool Bethesda for thirty eight years, Jesus warned him; "Listen you are well now; do not sin again, else much worse things will happen to you"(Jh 5:1-14)

St Peter said: If people have escaped from corrupting forces of the world through knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and are then caught again, and conquered by them, such people are in a worse state at the end than they were at the beginning. It would have been much better for them never to have known the way of righteousness, than to know of it and then turn away from the sacred command that was given to them. (2 Pet 2:20-21)

Having received forgiveness sins and delivered from a particular sin or many sins, if we again commit same sin/s or indulge in some other new sins, we will to lose freedom that the Lord has given by forgiving our sins. It is very important that we live on this earth with freedom that the Lord gives.

Yes, God warns us saying"; "Do not surrender your glorious privilege (of being free from sin) to any other people (to evil spirits). Happy are you people of Israel, you have the advantage of knowing what pleases the Lord."(Baruch 4:3-4) God is highly pleased when we reject sin in all its forms and remain holy to glorify him, for he said: "They are my people; I created them to glorify me". (Is 43:7)

HOW TO PROTECT OUR FREEDOM FROM SATAN?

Freedom from sin (Satan) is what God has promised. Yes, God promised freedom when he called us. "Freedom is what we have; Christ has set us free! Stand, then, as free people and do not allow your freedom to make you to be slaves again". (Gal 5:1) Yes, we lose joy and peace, but gain guilt and sadness when we commit sin. Because, the invisible chains of evil spirit binds our soul, thus causing us to lose our freedom. We should stand as free people. Not allow ourselves to become slaves again for sin. God promised freedom to Israelites. He said to Moses; Tell the Israelites that I say to them; "I am the Lord. I will rescue you and set you free from the slavery of Egyptians."(Power of sin) "I will make you my own people and I will be your God. You will know that I am your Lord your God, when I set you free from the slavery of Egypt" (power of evil). (Exodus 6:6- 7)

We have the privilege of living as God's free people. When the Lord rescued Israelites from their slavery in Egypt and set them free, the Israelites became slaves again by worshipping idols when Moses had gone to Mountain Zion to receive Ten-Commandments. Having seen how God rescued them, lead them through the Red Sea and provided everything in the desert, they could not repose trust God. They were deceived by their own mind to trust in idols. This is how Satan deceives our mind to trap us in wicked ways and makes us slaves again. Thus we lose God's blessings. Only in obedience to God's commandments we receive blessings that are promised as we read in Duet 28:1-13. (Reader is advised to read this passage)

God who sets free from slavery also gives us freedom to act. *"In the beginning God created Man and gave him freedom to act. He said; if you want to, you can keep Commands of the Lord. You can decide whether you want to be loyal to him or not. He has placed fire and water before you. Reach out and take whichever you want. You have a choice before you; "between life and death". You will get whatever you choose."*(Sir 15:14 – 17) *If you choose to do evil, you die spiritually, lose freedom & become slaves of Satan. Yes, "Do not lose your glorious privilege of being God's free people" (Baruch 4:5)*

WHAT ARE THE EIGHT STEPS THAT WILL HELP YOU TO PROTECT YOUR FREEDOM FROM SIN?

It is very important for every person that he protects his freedom from sin to experience the joy of the Lord and rejoice in his presence every moment in life. Because freedom that we experience in our spiritual life and physical life will give new life and make life a celebration every day. Further this freedom will change our relations with others in a positive manner and resolve personal issues and bring harmony. In this freedom we celebrate our relation with God as Father and son. For God said; "Israel you are my dearest son, the child I love the best. Whenever I mention your name, I think of you with love. My heart goes out to you; I will be merciful." (Jer 31:20) But when we sin we become captives. (Is 50:1) And this sin becomes a barrier between man and God. (Is 58:1-2)

Now let us try to understand "eight steps" that we have to follow to protect our freedom in Our spiritual life.

STEP-1: Avoid the occasions of sin: If your loneliness is causing you to sin because of sinful thoughts, imaginations, sexual fantasies, pondering over memories of past sinful relations (or) past sinful

moments and browsing sinful sites in internet, etc., then, **“avoid being alone”**. Be with family and good friends. Spend quality time in playing, reading good literature and by developing healthy hobbies/healthy habits. Listen to good music and spiritual songs.

In your free time read Scriptures. Because when you read Scriptures and listen to spiritual songs, the words in the Scriptures and the words in the spiritual songs will get embedded in your subconscious mind and it will keep playing in your mind. Yes, it will keep playing in your mind even when you sleep. Thus you will experience presence of the Lord in you always. In God’s presence you will experience freedom. The Satan will flee from you. (2 Cor 17-18) His presence will deliver you and protect you from sins that you commit in loneliness as mentioned above. Because God is faithful, he will strengthen you and keep you safe from the evil one. (2 Thess 3:3)

SETP-2: Avoid bad company: If your friends are luring to sin, cut that friendship. If you know that going to a particular place is causing you to fall in sin, may be visiting a club, liquor shop, female company, drug joint or a gambling joint etc., avoid going there forever. **Because Jesus said; “if your right eye is causing you to sin, pluck it and throw it. If your right hand is causing you to commit sin, cut it and throw it. It is better to enter the kingdom of God with one eye and one hand than to be thrown in hell with both eyes and both hands.(Mat 5:29-30)** By saying pluck your eye or cut your hand, Jesus warns us to avoid bad company/bad occasions which are luring you fall in sin.

STEP-3: Avoid electronic gadgets and sinful literature: Mobile phone and internet are great gifts by God to mankind for spreading Good News to ends of the earth. But Satan is using these electronic gadgets/medium as the most powerful weapons to make children of God as slaves of sin by exposing them to dirty websites for viewing obscene pictures/videos. Also through internet and mobile phone people get trapped in unwanted relations which leads them to fornication, adulterous relations, Gay/Lesbian relations, orgy, on-line gambling, forging, hacking of sites & bank accounts, steal information, plant information that will create communal disharmony etc. You may think of any crime in present days. Mobile phones and internet are the source for all crimes.

If you understand that these gadgets are luring you to commit sin, just avoid using them. Never get addicted to them. Use them very sparingly for bare minimum requirement. Best thing to do is; to avoid using these gadgets as far as possible. Also do not

read any sinful literature that excites your imagination. Because, adult contents and sinful literatures are traps that Satan has set to lure children of God in sin.

Any sinful literature that you read will not affect you immediately. The contents of the sinful literature that you read will get deep seated in your mind. Your mind will reflect on those contents in your leisure time and in your loneliness. It will excite you with sinful sexual fantasies. The power of sinful-self will compel you to act on what you read. If you are not strong in God's Spirit, or if you are weak in your mind, you will fall for your desires and will indulge in sinful actions and sinful relations. The contents that you read in sinful literature will play in your mind again and again to hunt you. It will make you a slave for those sinful thoughts and make you to commit those sins repeatedly. It is extremely difficult to get over the filth that has entered your subconscious mind. Best thing to do is; avoid reading any sinful literature and throw them away or burn them if you have any. Such a discipline will greatly help to avoid sin and protect your freedom from sin.

STEP-4: Avoid people advocating wrong practices: Avoid people who advocate wrong practices in faith which are against the teachings of Scriptures. Such as practicing: occult practices, astrology, depending on zodiac signs, pagan worship, worship of heavenly bodies, worship of living creatures, worship of human beings, practicing witchcraft, magic, consulting the spirits of dead etc.(Is 47:10-15 & Is 44:9-20) Because, these practices will take your faith away from living God and plunge you in deep darkness. Our God hates people who indulge in such practices.

If you are influenced by people to indulge in these sinful practices, and if you follow them, then you become part of them. (1 Cor 8:1-12) Hence, you will commit sin against the first two Commandments of Ten Commandments where God said; "I am the God who brought out of your slavery in Egypt. Let there be no God for you other than me. Do not make yourself images of anything in heaven or on earth or in water under the earth. Do not bow down & worship it, for, I am your God. I do not tolerate rivals. (Ex 20:1-5)

STEP-5: Avoid using your tongue carelessly: If you do not exercise control over your tongue, it will cause fire in your own life, (Prov 13:3) and also in your neighbour's house. (Prov 12:6) You will become a slave for foul language and you will be judging others. (Mat 7:1-2) By your wrong judgement you will destroy reputation of

people and there-by destroy their future. A wound caused by your tongue is much serious than a wound caused by a sword. (Prov 12:18) Your tongue is a world of wrong occupying place in your body and spreading evil. It sets fire on entire course of existence with the fire that comes from the hell itself. (James 3:6) No one is ever able to tame their tongue. It is evil and uncontrollable full of deadly poison. (James 3:8) Word of thanks giving to the Lord and cursing neighbour pour out from the same tongue. This should not happen. (James 3:10) Use your tongue to glorify God in your words, in your praises, in your prayer and in your songs. For, God said; "they are my people. I created them to glorify me". (Is 43:7)

STEP-6: Avoid unwanted conversations. If you converse with women/men for a long time, her beauty or his personality will lure you to commit sin. Unwanted conversation with any person will expose your weakness and the other person will take advantage over you knowing it. Particularly if that person is of opposite sex, it will end up in sin in one way or other. (Sir 9:2-9)

STEP-7: Avoid engaging in any group activity: Avoid getting into group activities where people organise friendship clubs for physical pleasures and fun. Such activities include drinking in clubs, taking drugs in parties, visiting brothels, spouse swapping, orgy, pagan worship, satanic worship and producing adult films / X-rated films etc. Such practices will only make you to burn with passions which will burn up your body (Prov 5:3-21, 6:20-29, 7:6-23) and destroy your soul. (2 Tim 3 6-7) Similarly, there are people who gather more and more people, indulge with them in money making business such as chain of people trying influence others to indulge in certain business activity to make money. This is the latest trend in the world where people indulge in such practices to earn quick money. Such practices will make you become greedy for money. It will further lead you into wrong friendship and wrong relations which will destroy your life, because "the love for money is the source for all kinds of evils. Some have been so eager to have it that they wandered away from real faith and have broken their hearts with many sorrows". (1 Tim 6:10)

STEP-8: "Do not cling to the evens of the past or dwell on what happened long ago: An idle mind is a devil's workshop. It is true that, when you are given free time, you ponder over your past memories. It may be may be good memories to cherish. Or it may be those moments of sin or memories about old sinful relations. Such practice will surely bring you under the cloud of sin again, though

you may have given up those sins and sinful relations. If you dwell on your past sinful memories, then, you will lose freedom that God has given you after he delivered you from those sins. God said; *"Do not cling to the evens of the past or dwell on what happened long ago. Watch out for new things I am doing. It is happening already. You can see it now. I will make a road through wilderness. (He will smoothen the ups & downs in our life) and give you streams of water there". (Is 43:18) The Holy Spirit will flow in you to give new life.*

Yes dear believers, never look back in to your past or dwell on past bad events / memories, for God is continually renewing your life for better living to give you New Life. *For his words says; "The Lord is with you; his power gives you victory. The Lord will take delight in you. His love (Word of God) will give you New Life" (Zeph 3:17)*

The Spirit of wisdom renews everything in us as King Solomon said; *"Wisdom is the breath of God's power - a pure and radiant stream of glory from the Almighty. Nothing that is defiled can steal it way in to wisdom. She is the reflection of eternal light a perfect mirror of God's activity and Goodness. Even though she can act alone she can do anything. **She makes everything new although she never changes.** From generation to generation she enters the souls of holy people and makes them God's friends and prophets."(Wis 7:25-27) *This process is "Spiritual renewal" where God the Creator is constantly renewing his own image in us to bring us to full knowledge of himself."(Col 3:10) Even though our physical body is gradually decaying, yet our spiritual being is being renewed day by day till the full nature of Christ is formed in us.(2 Cor 4:16)**

Dear believer such spiritual process can take place in you, if only you make it a habit to worship him and read Bible in the early morning between 3 and 6 AM. Also you should spend your free time with your Creator by living a committed life. Best thing to do is; *"use your free time in reading Scriptures and meditate on Word of God". The Spirit of God will work in you to give insight and understanding on God's promises. The Spirit will also give revelations about the heavenly Kingdom. (1 Cor 2:6-14) Such revelations will open your mind for spiritual truths in Bible and deliver you from your sinful-self, strengthen your faith and spiritual life.*

God said; "Devote all your time to study the Lord's commands and thinking about them. He will give insight and understanding that you are looking for."(Sir 6:37)

Be sure about what you want in life. Dear believer, you know about all your weaknesses which are causing you to fall in sin repeatedly. Only your own spirit knows about yourself. Avoid all those things that are making you to fall. Jesus said; "If your right eye is causing you to sin pluck it and throw it. If your right hand is causing you to sin, cut it and throw it. It is better to enter the Kingdom of God with one eye or one hand rather to be thrown in to hell with you both eyes and both hands."(Mat 5:29-30)

Dear believer, it is easier said than done. Yes. We all are human beings having all kind of weaknesses, emotions, senses, preferences, likes, dislikes, pride and ego. We have, desires for flesh, desire for money and desire for power & authority. Hence we yield ourselves for sinful attractions. It is an extremely difficult for us in this modern world to be free from sin and to protect our freedom from sins with so many attractions and temptations flashed around us. But it is not impossible. Because we worship a God who is a God of impossible. (Luke 1:37) Nothing is difficult for him. (Jer 32:27) Yes, God asks one question to you; "Is there a limit to my power? (Num 11:23) God can make impossible thing possible for you!

Yes, Jesus will help you. He will make you to walk on sinful offers & attractions of this world as he walked on water. Yes, you can remain free from sin and protect your freedom. Because, form abundant wealth of his Glory, Jesus will supply all your needs to resist sin. (Grace & power) (Phil 4:19) You can do all things through Christ Jesus who strengthens you. (Phil 4:13) Yes, dear believer, you can walk on your sinful desires if you hold on to Christ and allow him to work in you. Jesus offers you this help to all who seek him. He said; "I stand & knock at the door. If anyone opens the door I will enter in his house and eat with him. He will eat with me".(Rev 3:20) Yes, if you open your heart, allow Christ to enter in your life to take control in all areas of your life, he will make it possible for you to walk on your sinful desires & weaknesses which causes you to sin repeatedly.

Observe strict discipline. This calls for discipline in your thoughts, discipline in your desires, discipline in your eyes, discipline in your words, discipline in your actions, discipline in your dress code, discipline in what you eat and drink, discipline in your relations, discipline in your martial relation and finally discipline in your worship. If you exercise these discipline in life, surely you can protect your freedom from sin because Satan enters our body and makes us slaves through your desires , your eyes, your words, your actions, your dress, your relations and through what you eat and

drink and finally through your worship. **About discipline God warns us thus:** "Wisdom" the Spirit of God who is the teacher will lead you in a difficult path. She will make you so afraid that you will think that you cannot go on. The discipline she demands will be tormenting and she will put you to test with her requirements until she trusts you completely. Then she will come to you without delay and reveal her secrets to you and make you happy."(Sir 4:17-18).

DOES FASTING HELP US TO PROTECT OUR FREEDOM?

Yes, people observe fasting for protection. Wisdom's Spirit, the Holy Spirit will be there to protect you if you discipline yourselves in all areas of your life that are explained above and surrender your life to him in humbleness. If you face difficulty in disciplining yourself in any of the area in life, the only option you have is; "to observe fast and pray" to win Lord's favour (power from above) to overcome your weaknesses. *Yes dear believer, the Satan will not allow you to be disciplined and give up your sins. Every sin that is lying deep in your heart is a satanic bondage. The desires and weaknesses for sin in your mind is a satanic infliction which manifests as Satan's invisible chains that are binding your soul to keep you as slave for sin.*

The satanic forces will not allow you to surrender your sins in hands of the Lord. To overcome satanic inflictions and to break Satan's invisible chains which are binding your soul, you need power from above, which you will receive only through fasting and prayer. Jesus himself said; such kinds of evil spirits can be delivered only through fasting and prayer. (Mat 17:21)

Fasting is the only way for freedom: Fasting may be one day, or three days or seven days, or twenty one days or forty days as explained below. People win Lord's favour by fasting & praying. (Jer 36:9, Jonah 3:1-10 & Joel 2:12-26) When you fast, you deny your body for food. With food, flesh becomes strong. But when you deny your body for food in fasting your spirit becomes strong. When you fast, God sees your heart and sends his Spirit upon you. The Spirit of God, "the power from above" will break invisible satanic chains which are binding your soul.

Our Lord promises that; "Even though the Assyrians are strong and numerous they will be destroyed and will disappear. My people I made you suffer, but I will not do it again. I will now end the power of Assyria over you and break the chains that binds you." (Nahum 1:12-13) Yes, God will break the invisible chains that are

binding your soul and will fill you with grace & power that you need to resist sin in all its forms. When you fast & pray, you receive power from above to resist your sinful-self which causes to sin repeatedly.

In Scriptures we see how people fasted to receive protection. Through fasting they won the Lord's favour.

>> The Jews won favour of the Lord to fight against the soldiers of Haman who ordered the killing of Jews by fasting for three days and nights. Finally Jews won the war against their enemies. (Esther: Chapters 4 to 9)

>> Judith won over the army General Holofernes with help of the Lord, gained through fasting and prayer (Judith: Chap 4 to 15)

>> People won favour of the Lord by observing fasting, when they heard the Lord's message about the destruction that was to come upon them through Prophet Baruch. On seeing how people acted the Lord changed his mind about destruction that he was about to send on them. (Jer 36:4-10).

>> Prophet Ezra gained Lord's favour for 'protection and freedom' by leading people in fasting before he undertook the dangerous journey from Ahava Canal to Jerusalem (Ezra 8:15-36)

>> Prophet Esdras fasted for seven days on four occasions on the instruction of angel Uriel to gain insight and wisdom on spiritual truths hidden from mankind. (Esdras 5:20)

>> Prophet Daniel fasted twenty one days to receive God's favour to overcome the oppression of demon from Persia. The angel Michael was sent by God to help and deliver him. (Dan 10:1-18)

>> Jesus Christ gained favour of his Heavenly Father by fasting for forty days in his human nature before he commenced his public Ministry in preaching Good News. Thus Jesus set an example to the world and taught us that this world is filled with evil spirits. If you want to do any work concerning the Kingdom of God, the evil spirits will attack to destroy your efforts. So we need to fast and pray to gain favour of God for our protection, freedom.

>> When disciples of Jesus could not deliver a man possessed with evil spirits Jesus said to them; "such kind of evil spirits can be delivered only through fasting and prayer." (Mat 17:14-21)

FINAL STEP TO RECEIVE FREEDOM FROM THE POWER OF SIN

OFFER YOURSELF AS A LIVING SACRIFICE TO GOD

Dear believer, there are no two ways about protecting our freedom from sin in this sinful world. We have to decide what we want. If we want to live with the attractions and sinful offers of this world, then we compromise on our freedom in sin and live like people of this world who have no knowledge or concern about the eternal life that Christ has promised mankind. *If you want to protect your freedom the power of sin and live without sin, to gain the eternal life, then the only option you have is to observe regular fasting at least once in a week (on Fridays) to strengthen your inner self to reject sin in all its forms.* It is important for you to continue your prayers regularly sitting at the feet of the Lord in the morning and evening. Also, if possible pray in the afternoon at 3 PM which is the hour of mercy. The best time to pray is early morning hours 3 to 6 A M.

When you seek the Lord's face by worshipping him & read his words in morning hours, God will bless you with Spirit of Wisdom. The Spirit of Wisdom will strengthen you in faith and spiritual life. It will fill you with grace & power to overcome all your weaknesses, to remain firm against your sinful-self which is causing you to sin repeatedly. The Spirit of Wisdom will transform you inwardly. You will receive power to exercise self-control over your weak inner-self.

St Paul spoke on this truth. He said; "Offer yourself as living sacrifice to God, dedicated to his service and pleasing him. This is the true worship you should offer. Do not conform yourself to the standards of this world, but let God transform you inwardly by a complete change of mind. Then you will be able to know the will of God-what is good, pleasing him & perfect". (Rom 12:1-2)

Jesus gave his mother Mary as Guardian for the Church: Also, it is very important for believers to meditate on Rosary in the morning and in the evening to enjoy the protection of Mother Mary for she is our guardian whom Christ has placed for protection of the Church. Mother Mary is our shield and protection from the Satan. *Yes, while hanging on the cross Jesus Christ gave his mother-Mary as "Mother" to his disciples who were entrusted by Jesus to build the Church after his death and resurrection. (Jh 19:25-27)*

Jesus knew that Satan will attack the Church to destroy it. Hence he gave his mother Mary as Mother for the Church which was

to be built/raised by the disciples, so that she as a Mother will safe guard the Church from Satan. Mary is the "Woman" chosen by God the Father in eternity to be the Mother for whole creation because she became the Mother of God. God the Father chose Mary to become Mother of Jesus Christ through whom the whole creation came in to existence as the scriptures says:

"The Word (Jesus) already existed; he was with God. From the very beginning the Word (Jesus) was with God. Through him (Jesus) God created all things. Not one thing in all creation was made without him (Jesus)." (Jh 1:1-3) This gives a very clear discernment that Jesus Christ was God who created the whole universe. Since Mary became the Mother of Jesus, she became the Mother of God. By becoming the mother of God she received the power and authority over the Satan. That is why on the cross Jesus gave Mary as the Mother and Guardian to the disciples who were entrusted by Jesus to build the Church. As believers in Jesus Christ we become part of the Church. Hence, we enjoy protection of Mother Mary, who protects children of God from snares of the Satan.

DOES GOD WANT TO PROTECT OUR FREEDOM?

God who knows our weaknesses and yet have promised eternal life. He will not leave us alone or abandon us to the power of Satan. For Jesus said; I will not leave you as orphans."(Jh 14:18) When I will go, I will ask the Father and he will give you another Helper who will stay with you forever. He is the Spirit who will reveal truth about God. (Jh 14:16-17) The Helper the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name will teach you everything."(Jh 14:26) This is how Jesus Christ our Shepard has given a Helper the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost to the Church.(Acts 2:1- 4) The Spirit continues to remain with us to help us, guide us, lead us, anoint us and protect us from our weaknesses/sinfulness and from the snares of the evil one. Further the Spirit assured that; "He will not leave us, nor will he ever forsake us."(Heb 13:5)

Jesus Christ promised that: "I have come in order that you may have Life. Life in all its fullness". (Jh 10:10)

If 'life in fullness' is what Christ has promised us, it give us a discernment that; "We will always enjoy freedom from our weaknesses from sin, desires for flesh, all kind of worldly afflictions, bandage, sins and invisible chains that binds our soul." This promise

will be fulfilled in us if we sincerely look for God's help by claiming his promises given below:

>> *"The Lord has promised that he himself will be a wall of fire around the city (his people) to protect it and that he will live there with his people in all his glory (Zechariah 2:5)*

>> *"I will make a covenant with them that guarantees their security. I will get rid of all the dangerous animals (all evil Tricks & satanic attacks on people) in the Land. So that my sheep (God's children) can live safely in the fields and sleep in the forest. (Ezekiel 34:25)*

>> *"The protector of Israel never sleeps. The Lord will guard you; he is by your side to protect you. He will protect you from all dangers and he will keep you safe. He will protect you as you come and go, now and forever. (Ps 121:4-8)*

>> *"As mountains surround Jerusalem the Lord will surround his people now and forever" (Ps 125:2)*

>> *"Finally God says; "I say Jerusalem, 'You are my people! I have given you my teachings and I protect by my right hand". (Is 51:14)*

HELP COMES FROM THE HOLY SPIRIT

God's love for us is everlasting love. (Jer 31:3) His Mercy and Love comes to us like a river that never goes dry. (2 Esdras 2:32) Mountains and hills may crumble. But his love shall never come to an end. (Is 54:10) For a brief moment God may forsake us (because of our wickedness). But when we repent, he will gather us with great compassion. (Is 54:7) Yes dear believers, God's Love for us is so great that he has not left us alone in this world to fight against the Satan. Jesus said; "I will not leave you as orphans. (Jh 14:18) When I go, the helper will come. Unless I go the helper will not come. Yes, we have a helper, the Holy Spirit (Jh 14:16) whom God the Father gave us on the 'Day of Pentecost.' (Acts 2:1-4) He is with us always, ready to help in every situation provided we seek him in humbleness. *Yes, the Holy Spirit will not only help us, but also fill us with fruits of the Spirit (Gal 5:22) and gifts of the Spirit. (1 Cor 12:4-11)*

The fruits of the Spirit are; Love, Joy, Peace, Patience, Kindness, Goodness, Faithfulness, Humility and Self-control. The richness & power in fruits of Holy Spirit will deliver us from all our weaknesses and sinful desires. *Thus the fruits will strengthen our inner-being and fill us the grace to fight all our negative attributes which are causing us to indulge in sin repeatedly.*

The Gifts of the Spirit are; Wisdom, Knowledge, Faith, Power to heal, Power to do miracles, Gift of speaking God's message, Ability

to tell the difference between gifts that come from Spirit and those that are not, Ability to speak in strange tongues, and Ability to explain what is said. The gifts of the Spirit, will help to build a strong spiritual life and gain sure foundation in faith there by we will receive courage and conviction to reject temptation and sin in all its forms even when our life is put to danger.

The anointment of the Spirit will give courage, enlightenment, power & grace to endure our trials, temptations and tribulations. The Spirit will encourage us to remain faithful to the Lord in the deepest darkest hour. Even when we go through the valley of death we will not fear or lose hope. In such darkest hour the Spirit will counsel us and guide us as to; what to speak, what to do, how to do, when to do, and how to overcome the situation. God said that the Spirit himself will be our teacher in moments of difficulties and dark hours when we are in distress as we read in Scriptures that:

>> **"The Lord will make you to go through hard times, but he himself will be there to teach you, and you will not have to search for him anymore. If you wander off to the road to right or to left, you will hear his voice behind you saying; "Here is the road. Follow it" (Is 30:20-21)**

>> **"But for you, God has poured out his Spirit on you. As long as his Spirit remains in you, you do not need anyone to teach you. For his Spirit teaches you about everything and what he teaches is true not false. Obey the Spirit's teachings then and remain in union with Christ". (1 Jh 2:27)**

>> **Jesus said;** "The Helper, Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name will teach you everything and make you remember everything I have told you". (Jh 14:26)

Here the question for believers is! Do you really seek help of the Holy Spirit, obey teaching of Christ and remain faithful to him during times of temptations /trials /tribulations?

Lift up yourself in prayer and speak to the Lord about it!

ARE YOU WITH THE LORD IN DIFFICULT TIMES?

Temptations and tribulations are part of Christian life. Hence you need God's grace. Because, Jesus himself told that this world will make you suffer, but remain united with me for I have won over this world. (Jh 16:33) **St Peter said;** "My dear friends, do not be

surprised at the painful test that you are going through as though some unusual thing has happened to you. Rather be glad that you are sharing the sufferings of Christ so that you may be full of joy, when his glory is revealed. Happy are you if you are insulted because you are Christ's followers. This means the glorious Spirit, the Spirit of God is resting on you."(1 Pet 4:12-14)

Hence Jesus said; "Remain united with me, and I will remain united with you. A branch cannot bear fruit by itself unless it remains united with the trunk. In the same way you cannot bear fruit unless you are united with me". (Jh 15:4) **St Paul said;** to fight against temptations we do not need muscle power. When we feel weak & lonely in spiritual life we need God's grace (his power) to remain strong and remain faithful to him. Without God's grace St Paul could not have continued his Ministry to spread Gospel in many countries and accomplished God's will. **If we remain with God in our trials/tribulations, seek his help when we feel weak to resist temptations, God gives assurance of his help by saying: "My Grace is all you need, for my Power is greatest when you are weak."(2 Cor 12:9)**

Jesus accomplished his Father's will through this Grace. When Jesus went through agony in the garden Gethsemane, he was feeling very low & weak in Spirit. In his anguish, fear gripped him. **He asked his Father to take away the cup of suffering; if it was in his will. But his Father did not take away the cup of suffering; he sent an angel to strengthen Jesus by filling him with Grace (power) to endure the sufferings and fulfil his will. (Luk 22:42-43)** Because Jesus was filled with this grace he endured sufferings and paid the price for our sins on the cross. Thus Jesus accomplished his Father's will.

Grace is received through fasting and prayer. Dear believer, in times of tribulation & testing we can't be united with the Lord unless we are filled with his grace. Our sufferings in this world is bound to continue and it will increase in the end of days. Because, without suffering there is no Salvation. And without bloodshed there is no forgiveness. (Mat 28:27-28) Our trials & tribulations will not deny our salvation, if we are united with Christ. To remain united with Christ we need grace so that we may not turn away from the Lord due to our weakness. For Jesus said; "Keep watch & pray. You will not fall in temptation. The Spirit is willing but the flesh is weak" (Mat 26:41). We receive this grace only through fasting and prayer.

To keep our spirits burning and to remain with the Lord in our sufferings we must make it a practice to read regularly/daily the

letters written by St Paul to Romans, Corinthians, Galatians, Timothy, Thessalonians and letters written by St Peter & St John addressed to believers. Such good practice will help in renewing our faith and filling ourselves with God's Grace through fasting and prayer. We have already seen the importance of fasting in the previous pages. So, let us take courage to remain with the Lord in our temptations, tribulations and trials.

GOD'S PROMISES TO FIGHT FOR US IN OUR STRUGGLE AGAINST SIN

Dear believers in Christ, in our struggle against this world and against sin we will go through many sufferings. We are bound to lose many things that are very dear to us. St Paul said; "But all those things I might count as profit, I reckon as loss for Christ's sake. Not only those things; I reckon everything as complete loss for the sake of what is so much valuable; "the knowledge of Jesus Christ", my Lord. For his sake I have thrown everything away; I consider all that as mere refuse, so that I might gain Christ."(Phil3:7-8) In such situations, i.e., when we lose our worldly possessions, for the sake of saving knowledge of Christ, God tells us to remain faithful to him, for we will gain the heavenly Kingdom when the struggle is over.

We should understand the spiritual truth that; it is our Lord who is in control of everything happening around us. In life, we may go through fire and flood. But, it is in full knowledge of the Lord who created us, who cares for us and who provides us everything. If the Lord who loves us with everlasting love, and does everything good for us has caused such struggle to come in our life, then the Lord will have a definite purpose for this difficult time in our life.

Our Lord does not withhold anything good for his children (Ps 84:11) and he does not derive any pleasure in seeing us sufferings. (Lamentation 3:33) All our struggles, suffering against sin will turn out to be a blessings if only we hold on to the Lord and obey him faithfully. The Lord looks for our obedience and faithfulness in our struggle to bless us. Yes, in our struggle he will open our eyes of faith. (Job 36:15) And, in our sufferings he will open our mind for Scripture. (Luk 24:45)

But, are we faithful to Christ in our distress? If we are, then, he assures to fight for us as we read below;

>> "I say to Jerusalem, you are my people! I have given you my teaching, and I will protect you with my right hand." (Is 51:16)

>> *I will fight against whoever fight against you; I will make them understand that I am your God. (Is 49:25-26)*

>> *If you obey my command, I will fight against all your enemies. My angels will go ahead of you and destroy all your enemies. (Ex 23:22-23)*

>> *"I will fight for you; there is no need for you to do anything". (Ex14:14).*

>> *"The enemy (Satan) will not enter the city (our body) or shoot a single arrow against us. No soldiers (evil spirit) with shields (evil tricks) will come near the city (us) and no siege-mound will be built around it (No satanic infliction will come upon us). The enemy (Satan) will go back by the road which he came without entering the city (our body). I, the Lord have spoken. I will defend the city (our body) and protect it for the sake of my honour and because of the promise I have made to my servant David." (Is 37:33-35)*

>> *The Lord fights for us because he is the Lord who brought us out of Egypt. He fights for us like a wild ox. (Num 23:22)*

>> **Finally the Lord who fights for us says;** *"You will succeed not by your military might, or by your own strength, but by My Spirit, says the Lord. The obstacles as great as mountains will disappear before you. (Zech 4:6-7)*

Dear believers, are you ready to hold on to the Lord in times of testing and in times of distress? Speak to the Lord about it. He will give you the grace to remain firm and hold on to him in all your sufferings.

WILL THE POWER FROM ABOVE DELIVER US?

God's words are so powerful that when you accept it with faith it works wonders. It can set us free from all those evil spirits which have caught our souls when we invited them at the time we committed sin wilfully as we read in Heb 4:12.

Here St Paul says; *"The Word of God is alive and active, sharper than any double edged sword. It cuts all the way through where soul and spirit meet (spirit refers to the evil spirit which caught our soul when we committed sin) and deliver our soul from the invisible chains that are binding us. (Wis 17:17)*

God gives us the following promises to break the invisible chains that are binding us and set our souls free from the power of Satan" as we read below:

>> *"When I break my people's chain and set them free from those who made them slaves, then they will know that I am the Lord. The*

heathen nation (power of Satan) will not plunder them anymore, and the wild animals will not kill and eat them. They will live in safety and no one will terrify them. (Ezkl 34:27)

>> This is what the Lord says to his people Israel: Even though the Assyrians are strong and numerous they will be destroyed and disappear; "I will now end Assyria's power (power of Satan) over you and break the chains that bind you." (Nahum 1:12-13)

>> "I will open the way for them and lead them out of exile (exile refers to evil bondage & sinful living). They will break out of the city gates (Chains of Sin that are binding us) and go free. Their King (Jesus) their Lord himself will lead them out". (Micah 2:13)

These are the promises that God gives you to set your souls free from the evil bondage which are your desires for worldly attractions and weaknesses for sin. These desires and weaknesses are causing you to indulge in sin repeatedly.

THE QUESTIONS TO THE BELIEVERS AT THIS JUNCTURE ARE:

1. Are you ready to accept the Word of God (his promises) with all sincerity without doubting?
2. Have you made a firm decision to never commit that sin again?

If you make a firm decision to give up your sins, then the Lord your God will be with you in your decision. (Duet 1:27) He will deliver you from all your desires and weaknesses that are forcing you to sin repeatedly as promised by him in Isaiah 50:6-8

Speak to Jesus about your sinfulness and your inability to surrender your desires and weaknesses. He will give you power & grace to surrender your mind and your sinfulness.

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO-11

HOW TO RECEIVE FREEDOM FROM SINFUL-SELF?

In this book we have been trying to understand the following:

- >> *What is sin?*
- >> *Why do we sin?*
- >> *What is the cause for our sinfulness?*
- >> *How the Satan lure human beings to indulge in sin?*
- >> *How does sin destroy our blessings?*
- >> *What God said about sin?*
- >> *What God said about sinners?*
- >> *How does God help sinners to overcome sin?*
- >> *How God fights for sinners in their appalling situation?*

Now we will try to understand; "in spite man's awareness on dangers of sin, in spite of all man's efforts to overcome sin and God's promises to redeem man from the bondage of sin, why does man continue to indulge in sin knowing that he will lose Kingdom of God?"

ARE WE STRUGGLING WITH-IN OURSELVES AGAINST THE POWER OF SIN?

Dear believers, the living soul which God placed in our body desires that we should please God by living righteous life. Our mind strives hard to reject sin in all its forms so as to keep the body, soul and spirit free from sin. (1 Thess 5:24) But we are not able to live up to the desires of our soul and mind to please God, because, there is inherent weakness for sin in our body. (Mat 26:41) This inherent weakness is the Satan's invisible chain that compels us to indulge in sin. Our weakness for sin, combined with our selfish motives makes us to forget the second greatest commandment that Jesus gave us, which is; "Love your neighbour as you love thy self". (Mat22:39)

We are aware of God's warning on the consequences of sin. *Yet we overlook God's commandment for love and indulge in sin, to achieve our selfish motives. We encounter such awful situation in life because, "our flesh and our bodily passions are always at war with our soul". (1 Pet 2:11) In other words human beings are struggling within themselves against the power of sin.*

Do we use our understanding and judgement? As human being with six senses and sound mind we cannot claim innocence of our evil words, actions which has caused harm to our fellow being and to ourselves. We cannot claim innocence about God's Law about good and evil. In creation everything is thrown open for us to understand what is good & evil, to use our judgement, so that, "we will love our neighbour and not harm anyone who is also created in likeness of God as we are." We read scriptures, hear numerous sermons. Also we hear witness given by people who were touched by the Lord. Yet all these are not having any impact on us to give-up sin. Above all, our conscience continues to warn us every minute that we should not indulge in sin to harm others, harm ourselves and there-by displease God. **Yet we continue to indulge in sin! It is astonishing to understand as to; "why we behave in this manner"?**

>> What has gone wrong with us?

>> Is there anything wrong in the way that God has created us?

When everything in the universe and constellation has been created wonderfully by God, and they all move in orderly manner, as the sun, the moon and all the heavenly bodies behave in an orderly manner, the nature and the forces of nature behave in an orderly manner, then, there can be nothing wrong in God's creation. From this we discern; that there is nothing wrong in how God has created human beings. Then why do we choose to go in wrong path and indulge in sin, instead of living a righteous life?

God has given man freedom to live by his choice. He as placed life and death before us. He has paced good and evil before us. He has placed his blessing and curse before us and said; "make choice and take whatever you want"! (Duet 30:1, 15 & 19) Yes, God has placed water and fire before us and said; reach out and take whatever you want. You have a choice between life and death. You will get whatever you choose. (Sir 15:16-17) This is how God has given us freedom to choose what we want! But it is we, out of pride, selfishness & disobedience make wrong choice to indulge in sin.

"Yes. It is we, out of our clear conscience and free-will make deliberate decision indulge in sin, to satisfy our pride, selfish desires and to enjoy sinful pleasures, knowing very well all its consequences". Yes dear believers, we should not overlook (or) forget the fact that 'No external Power' on this earth can compel us to commit sin, unless we wanted or given our consent to indulge in that act of sin, because we desired for its pleasures.

HOW TO RECIEVE FREEDOM FROM OUR INNER DESIRES?

We should know that human nature is sinful; because, sin is in our blood. The seed of sin was planted in human flesh by Satan when our first parents disobeyed God. Hence there is constant urge with-in us to get attracted to sin and accept sinful offers made by world. Every person on earth, is undergoing this struggle however saintly he may be, because, sin has spread to whole world (Rom 5:12) and human beings have become slaves for ruling spirits of the universe. (Gal4:3) Hence we live in this sinful nature. The spiritual truth about this struggle that we go through has been explained by St Paul as the "conflict in man" which was explained in Chapter 4 of this book.

DOSE THE DECISION TO COMMIT SIN SPRING WITH-IN US?

Given an opportunity, man would like to enjoy all the sinful pleasures of this world. That's why Jesus said; "it is not what goes inside a man makes him ritually unclean; rather what comes out of him makes him unclean". (Mat 15:11) He said; people wash the vessel outside and polish it. But inside it is full of dirt. That's why Jesus rebuked the Pharisees and the teachers of law and said; "you all are tombs that is white washed outside. Inside you are full of worms and dirt". (Mat 23:27) From your heart comes the evil ideas which leads you to kill commit adultery, and do all immoral things; to rob, lie, and slender others. These are the thing that makes you unclean. (Mat 15:19-20) From the above we understand clearly that, we are sinful by nature that is why sin takes birth with-in us!

The desire to commit sin is always looming over us; because, the seed of sin is sowed in human flesh by Satan as we understood earlier. Our mind is always looking for an opportunity or an excuse to commit sin because of our selfish desires, bodily passions which are at war with our soul. (1 Pet 2:11) Yes believers, there is only a thin line between being holy and being sinful. It is just a fraction of second between our decision to choose doing what is right & just pleasing God and doing what is evil. *The decision to commit sin comes within us. This decision is influenced by our sinful nature. Most of the time it is a conscious decision. Sometimes it is an involuntary decision. But it is we, who decide to commit that sinful act.*

Sinful people conceive sin which is to be committed. They plan and execute it. Having committed sin they enjoy its pleasure & repeat it. (Prov 2:13-15) Some people without knowing that a particular act is sin, they commit sin in ignorance. Some people know that a

particular act is sin and commit it due to some external compulsions or due some circumstances. *The will to commit sin or the reason to commit sin varies in people as explained below: (Let us take an example of a terror outfit which commits crimes against humanity)*

Sin committed consciously: A group of terrorists plan to attack a society at a particular time. They prepare for the attack, time it well and execute it. This sin is committed out of conscious will.

Sin committed involuntarily: Suppose in the same terror outfit; "if a person is made as a member forcefully", say by blackmailing him that his family will be wiped off if he does not join the terror outfit, and hence he has taken up arms out of fear of his family's safety and executes the crime along with others in terror acts, then he commits this sin involuntarily.

Sin committed without knowledge: Suppose in the same terror group small children have been recruited. Suppose they have radicalised and brainwashed to believe that killing of a people of a particular religion will be a service to their God and that, they will receive salvation if they do so. And the children have accepted /believed it to be true and they take part in terror act. Then those children are committing such crime without knowledge, because they have been radicalised and brainwashed about the truth.

"This is how people commit sin in various mental state. If you introspect your past, reflect on those moments when you indulged in sin, you will realise that every time you committed sin, you did it wilfully with your conscious mind because you desired its pleasures".

"IS DESIRE FOR SIN MORE DANGEROUS THAN SIN ITSELF?"

The inner desire to commit sin is more dangerous than the sin itself! Because, an act of 'one sin' when committed by a sinner against another person will harm the victim once. Simultaneously this act of sin also will hurt the sinner himself, because God said; 'if you sin, you are hurting yourself.'(Sir 19:4) Hence, a habitual offender, every time when commits sin with different persons, (May be serial rape, (or) serial killing,(or) serial theft (or) any other serial offence) apart from hurting the victims through his offence, he is also hurting himself every time he commits offence against his victims.

When he is habituated to commit such sin, over a period of time his repeated sins against others continues to hurt him more and

more, than his victims. The persons against whom he commits sin (his victims) are hurt once only. But this sinner who commits sin repeatedly get himself hurt every time he commits that offence against his victims. This will destroy the sinner's physical body and his spiritual life. Thus by committing repeated sins, without his knowledge the sinner is hurting himself grievously. This is what Jesus said; 'the thief (Satan) comes only to steal, kill and destroy.' (Jh10:10) Yes, the Satan will destroy the sinner's life and his body!

God warned us and said; "Avoid sin as if it were a snake": Now we understand the gravity of our sinful nature and our habitual sins which is burning with-in ourselves to destroy our body which is the temple of God. (1 Cor 3:16-17) Sin is like a venom of a snake. Once venom of a snake enters human body it destroys the blood vessels and disintegrate the flesh leading to death. Hence God warns sinners that; "Strangers will take all your wealth and what you have worked for will belong to someone else. You will lie groaning on your death bed, your flesh and muscles being eaten away". (Prov 5:11-12).

God warns sinners saying: *Do not let your passions carry you away; this can tear your soul into pieces like a bull. You will be left like a dead tree without any leaves or fruits. Evil desire will destroy you and make you a joke to your enemies. (Sir 6:2-3) Further God warns; Avoid sin as if it were a snake. If you get too near, it will sink its teeth in your soul like a lion and destroy you. Every law less act (every act of sin) leaves an incurable wound, like one left by a double edged-sword.(Sir 21:2-3) The burning desire to commit sin will take you through the road of death to destroy you. (Prov 5:3-6)*

DO WE REJECT SOUND DOCTRINE TO FOLLOW OUR SINFUL DESIRES?

In spite of God's warnings about the consequences of sins as given above, if we get habituated to sin, it will cause us to abandon our faith. *The Holy Spirit says clearly that; "some people will abandon their faith in later times; they will obey lying spirits (their heart desires) and follow the teachings of demons".(1 Tim 4:1) "They will reject the sound doctrine to follow their heart's desires and collect for themselves more and more teachers who will tell them what they are itching to hear. They will turn away from listening to truth (Christ) and give their attention to legends". (2 Tim 4:3-4) The Satan will gain control over such people who are burdened by guilt of their sins & driven by all kinds of desires. People who are always trying to learn but can never come to know of the truth. (Christ) In*

this condition of a person is lost for life within him. The Satan will take full control of him to destroy his soul. (2Tim3: 6-7)

Then, how do we handle ourselves? Dear believers, unless we are sturdy in God's words & in faith, neither we can have control over ourselves to resist our desires/our weakness to commit sin, nor, will we be able to fight the external forces that are luring us to commit sin. So, how do we handle ourselves? This is the biggest challenge that believers are facing in this modern sinful world. *Yes! How do we handle ourselves? It is becoming more and more difficult to resist our inner desires to commit sin because the worldly sinful attractions are growing constantly and we are growing increasingly weak for them.*

Yes, we are growing increasingly weak for sinful attractions of this world because we do not fast and pray to gain power to resist temptations. Also we are not sturdy in words of Jesus. Since we are weak in Life-giving Spirit of Jesus, our faith is not enduring. (Jh 6:63) *Because we are weak in God's Life-giving Spirit (power), we are wavering in mind. Hence we are not able to take firm decision to reject our desires to commit sin. Rather we can say that, we have become weak to resist and reject the temptations. Thus we yield for sins and live in sinful bondage & lose God's presence in us.*

WHO CAN WALK OVER HIS DESIRES TO COMMIT SIN?

"No power on earth" can compel us to indulge sin and to make us live as slaves of sin!

St Paul has brought out how people reject sound doctrine in their weakness to follow their heart desires & live as slaves of sin in 1 Tim 4:1-2, 2 Tim 4:3-4, and 2 Tim 3:6-7. (Please read these verses) Here, God said; "man is living as slave of sin because of his sinful desires and weaknesses for sin". Man rejects sound doctrine to follow his heart desires & bodily passions. This situation is very dangerous because if he die in this status he is sure to lose eternal life.

St Paul said; "Surely you know that the wicked will not possess the Kingdom of God. Do not fool yourselves; people who are immoral or who worship idols or are adulterers or are homosexual perverts or who steal or who are greedy or who are drunkards or who slander others or who are thieves or who indulge in filth & indecent actions, or who do witchcraft or who are jealous, who are ambitious, or who are envious or who indulge orgy-none of them will possess Kingdom of God/eternal life. (1 Cor 6:9-10 & Gal 5:19-21)

This calls for a very serious thinking on your spiritual life and on your desires/weaknesses to commit sin. If you do not make serious attempts to overcome your sinfulness, but pacify yourself that it is your sinful nature which is compelling you to live as slave for sin, then you are finding excuses to live as slave of sin to enjoy sinful pleasures. This means; "you declare that our God is not capable of saving those who have fallen in sin". (Or) You declare that; "Jesus Christ who is the supreme spiritual authority and ruler (Col 2:10) has no power over the wicked spiritual forces in the heavenly world the rulers, authorities and cosmic powers of dark age, which are luring you to live as slave of sin". (Eph 6:12)

Dear believer, as a sinner you have to reiterate within yourself that; "there is no power on this earth or in the heavenly world which can compel me to indulge in sin". Jesus Christ can deliver you in this appalling situation, because, he is the supreme spiritual ruler & authority over every spiritual rulers. (Col 2:10) Yes, Jesus Christ was given all authority in heaven & on earth by his Father. (Mat 28:18)

This only acknowledges to the world that, Jesus Christ is the Supreme God and Supreme power in the universe. Since our body is the temple of living God, (1 Cor 3:16-17) where Jesus Christ lives, St John said; "He that who lives in us (Christ) is greater than the one who lives in the world. (Satan)"(1 John 4:4) And, with him we can do all things.(Phil 4:13) Yes, if you realise the spiritual truth that Christ lives in you, and if you honour him in everything, then the desires which are compelling you to commit sin, will come under your feet. Yes, your desires cannot compel you to commit sin any longer.

WILL MEDITATION ON WORD OF GOD TRANSFORM US?

If you fill yourself with more and more Word of God/God's Spirit, and accept it with faith, then God will fill you with abundance of grace. This grace will transform your heart & mind to obey God and accept his will. Such transformation will take place in you because; "the Word of God is the breath of God's power, pure and radiant stream of glory from the Almighty. Nothing impure can stay in its path. It is the reflection of God's eternal light, a perfect mirror of God's activity and goodness. **The Word of God renews everything although it never changes.** It enters the souls of people and makes them God's friends and prophets. The Spirit of God will enter your heart & mind and transform you. (Wis 7:25-27) That's why God said; enrich yourself with Word of God and meditate on them, (Sir 6:37) so that you will be transformed inwardly. (Rom 12:1-2)

The wisdom & insight you receive from Word of God through meditation, will bring a transformation in your mind and heart. This transformation will change your stubborn heart into an obedient heart as God said: "I will give them a new heart and a new mind. I will take away their stubborn heart of stone and will give an obedient heart. Then they will keep my laws faithfully, obey all my commands. They will be my people and I will be their God (Ezkl 11:19 & 36:26)

This is true and a real promise because God said; 'My message (his words) is like a fire, and like a hammer that breaks rocks into pieces. (Jer 23:29) The meaning of this promise is; the Word of God will break your stubborn heart & disobedient mind and make you humble and obedient. It will cleanse your souls. This truth is what Jesus spoke when he said to his disciples; "You have been already cleansed by the teachings I have given you." (Jh 15:3) This is how meditation on Word of God will cleanse us to transforms us!

This Brings complete change of mind/inner self: Yes, God will give you a new heart and new mind. He will take away your stubborn heart and give you an obedient heart. When you receive obedient heart you will receive grace to overcome your desires/ weakness to commit sin. When you receive this grace you will receive conviction, confidence and courage to reject sin from bottom of your heart.

That's why St Paul said: "offer yourself as a living sacrifice to God, dedicated to his service and pleasing him. This is the true worship you should offer. Do not conform yourselves to the standards of this world, but let God transform you completely by a complete change of mind. (Rom 12:1-2) Yes, if you enrich yourself with his Words and meditate on them day & night, your heart& mind will be transformed. Because, Jesus Christ said; "I stand at the door and knock; if anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in to the house and eat with him and he will eat with me. (Rev 3:20) Dear believer, if you open your heart & mind to Jesus by reading his words and meditate on them, he will transform your hardened heart & disobedient mind because Jesus is God of impossible.(Lev 19:2)

The spiritual practices advised above will greatly help to transform you and build inner-strength. This inner strength will give you power to exercise "self-control over your weaknesses & desires" which are making you to fall in sin repeatedly. You should surrender your life to Jesus and allow him to take control in every area of your life. You should allow Jesus to work in your mind. If you sincerely surrender yourself and practice all spiritual exercises advocated

religiously, then, Jesus will take control over you and strengthen you in all your weakness by giving you Grace. (2 Cor 12:9) This Grace was the secret power through which St Paul accomplish his mission in continuing the Ministry of Christ in many countries.

ARE YOU STRENGTHENED IN INNER-SELF BY HIS GRACE?

Yes believer. If you are strong and firm in Word of God, you will experience the "Presence & Power" of Jesus Christ moving around you wherever you go and whatever you do. You will hear God's voice guiding us in everything you do. "The Lord will make you go through difficult times, but he himself will be there to teach you and you will not have to search for him anymore. If you wander off the road to right or left, you will hear his voice from behind; "Here is the road. Follow it". (Is 30:20-21) This is how God will take control over you to guide you in this spiritual journey.

Remember the Word of God and never lose its sight: Word of God will bring life, healing, power and strength in you. (Pro 4:20-22) If you meditate on Word of God in your free time, the Lord will give wisdom and understanding on the kingdom of God. Also he will give insight about your life, i.e. "How important is your life on earth?", and "How precious you are in the eyes of God?" The understanding on the heavenly Kingdom and on the importance of your life on earth will fill you with grace what the Lord had promised. He said; "My grace is all you need; for my power is the greatest when you are weak". (2 Cor 12:9) *This grace will transform your weak mortal body and make it like his own glorious body using his power; there-by you will remain strong in your inner-self to resist your sinful desires & weaknesses which lures you to commit sin repeatedly. (Phil 3:21).*

You need this Grace in the end of days: You need this Grace to become strong in your inner-being to reject sin, because, in end of days the Satan will use all available resources on earth to lure you to commit sin. The elected Governments of Countries in the world will honour sin and encourage people to live in sinful manner. (We have deliberated on this subject in Chapter-2: 'How sin spreads to corrupt the world') The Government of all Countries will come under the power of Satan to influence people to follow sinful ways of life to destroy their faith in God. He will also put an end to Sacrifices and Offerings. *Yes, Satan will stop the "Celebration of Holy Eucharist" / Holy Mass for three and a half years at the end of days. (Dan 9:26-27)* The Satan will gain full control over the world and establish his kingdom through the elected Government of all Countries. This

appalling situation has been brought out by St John in his revelations about the end of days in Rev 13:1-18. Believers are advised to read these books 'Daniel' and 'Revelations' for better understanding.

ARE YOU MORE THAN A CONQUEROR IN CHRIST?

Dear believer, it is only a person who has faith in Christ and obeys his teachings can walk over his sinful desires and weaknesses which are holding him as a slave for the Satan. Yes, with the help of Jesus Christ, who is the supreme spiritual ruler and authority, who lives in you, you can conquer the power of your sinful-desires & weaknesses, because, **"in Christ we are more than a conquerors". (Rom 8:37) And, "all things are possible for one who believes in Christ". (Mk 9:23)**

Yes, you can walkover your desires & weaknesses to commit sin with the help that Christ offers. However to encounter such spiritual experience, you should discipline yourself by various spiritual exercise such as:

- >> *Indulge in Praising & Worshiping God between 3 & 6 AM.*
- >> *Pray & read Bible at least twice a day. (Josh 1:8 & Ecc 11:6)*
- >> *Meditate on Rosary at least twice a day.*
- >> *Observe fasting on all Fridays only with water.*
- >> *Attend retreat as many times possible (at least twice a year).*
- >> *Confess you sins regularly. (At least once in a week)*
- >> *Attend Holy Mass. Receive Holy Communion as many time possible. (At least once in a week)*

Indulge in these spiritual practices. You will experience transformation in your inner-self. God's power will rest upon you. He will destroy all the strongholds & false arguments raised against the true knowledge of Christ. He will pull down every proud obstacles, take every thought captive and make it obey Christ. (2 Cor 10:3-6) Thus you will be set free from the power of your sinful-self.

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTION NO-12

HOW DOES THE HOLY SPIRIT HELP US TO OVERCOME SIN?

GOD SAID: 'THERE IS NO SAFETY FOR SINNERS!'

Dear believers, if a person lives by desires of mind and passions of body, indulges in sin deliberately, repeatedly and thinks that he will be safe because he is a man of authority, power, high status in society, or he is highly rich or he is highly qualified, or he has muscle power, he only deceives himself. Wherever he goes, whatever he does, his guilt will hunt his soul. He cannot escape from his conscience which will convict him on his sins. He will never experience peace in mind & rest in soul what God offers. Because 'Peace & Rest' are experienced only by the presence of Holy Spirit.

Yes dear believer, if you dishonour God's words, and continue to sin deliberately by rejecting his warning, your soul will be dead for God and your body will be a hiding place for evil spirits. (Jer 7:11) Your body will be hunted by evil spirits because Jesus said; "Wherever there is dead body (body dead for God's Spirit) vultures (evil spirits) will gather. (Luk 17:37) That's why God said; "there is no safety for sinners. (Is 48:22) It means sinners will not receive protection that God has promised in Ps 23, 91 & 121. Hence they will be exposed to powers of darkness which will steal 'peace' in their mind what Jesus offers, (Jh 14:27) remove 'rest' in their soul which Jesus promised. (Mat 11:28 & Heb 4:1-10) Their happiness will be lost. They cannot experience Kingdom of God with-in them. (Rom 14:17) If they die in this condition they will be lost for eternal life which Christ has promised. (Jh 11:25) That is why, God once again warns such persons that; "there is no safety for sinners."(Is 57:21)

WHAT IS THE POWER IN THE NAME -JESUS?

Sinners receive protection through power in the Name -Jesus: *But sinners who take Word of God seriously, (Jesus is the Word of God - Rev 19:13) obey it and repent for their sins receive Lord's protection through the power (in the name Jesus) that dwells in the Word.* In the book Joel 2:1-26 and Jonah 3:1-10 we read that when sinners took the Word of the Lord (Jesus) seriously and obeyed Jesus, by turning away from sin in true repentance they received God favour and protection. We understand this spiritual truth that; we receive

protection from evil spirits through the power in name-Jesus, from the prayer raised by Jesus to his Father in Gospel of John 17:17-19

Here Jesus prayed to his Father like this; "And now I am coming to you Father. I am no longer in this world. (Here Jesus remarks about the completion of his Ministry on earth) Holy Father keep them safe by the power of your name, the name you gave me (which is Jesus), so that they may be one, just as you and I are one. (Here, Jesus prayed for his disciples which includes all believers in Jesus Christ, for Jesus said "If you obey me, you are really my disciples"- Jh 8:31. While I was with them (his disciples) I kept them safe by the power of your name, the name you gave me. (Which is Jesus) I protected them and not one of them was lost except the man who was bound to be lost-so that the Scripture may come true."(Jh 17:11-13) **I dedicate them to yourself by means of truth; your word is truth.** I sent them into this world just as you sent me into the world. And for their sake, I dedicate myself to you in order that they too may be dedicate to you". Jh 17:17-19

Let us understand this prayer word by word:

- > Here Jesus clearly says that: he protected his disciples from evil spirits by the Power that dwells in the Name "Jesus". The name which the Heavenly Father gave him.
- > Here the Jesus is reiterating that there is Power in the Name "Jesus" which is heavenly Father gave him.

WHAT ARE THE SPIRITUAL TRUTHS IN THE NAME - JESUS?

The Bible reveals following truths in the name "Jesus":

- > **That** "Jesus - is the Word of God," (Re 19:13) who existed in the beginning before all creations. (Jh 1:1)
- > **That** God created the universe through "Jesus." (Heb 1:2)
- > **That** the whole universe is sustained buy the power that dwells in the Word (Jesus is the Word) (Heb 11:3)
- > **That** Word of God became flesh and lived among the mankind who is "Jesus Christ" himself. (Jh 1:14)
- > **That** Jesus Christ preserved the disciples/believers from Satan by the power that dwell in his name "Jesus."(Jh 17:11-12)
- > **That** Jesus (Word of God) who gives life to mankind for he said; man does not live by bread alone but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God. (Mat 6:33)

- > **That** this "NAME-JESUS" brings God's life giving Spirits in us to give us life in Spirit. (Prov 4:20-21, and Jh 6:63)
- > **That** through this "NAME-JESUS" which we receive forgiveness of sins. (Mat 26:27-28 & Jh 20:20)
- > **That** "Jesus is the Lord of Salvation." (Jonah 2:9 & Jer 23:6).
- > **That;** "Salvation comes from the name Jesus" (2 Tim 2:10)
- > **That;** Jesus is the one who leads us in Salvation." (Heb 2:10)
- > **That; in the name "Jesus' salvation is found.** For the Bible says; "Salvation is found through him alone; in all the world there is no one else whom God has given who can save us."(Acts 4:12)
- > **Jesus said; "I am the resurrection and life.** Whoever believes in me will live even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die". Jesus is the Lord of Salvation; those who believe in him will have eternal life". (Jh 11:25)

WHAT DO WE DISCERN IN THE NAME -JESUS?

"How the Power in the Name Jesus works to preserve us"?

- >> Since this name "Jesus" existed before creation in the form of Word of God,
- >> Since the universe was created through the power that dwells in this name "Jesus,"
- >> Since the universe is being sustained by the power that dwells in this name "Jesus,"
- >> Since this Word of God became flesh and lived among us in the name "Jesus,"
- >> Since forgiveness of sins and healing of soul is found in the name "Jesus"
- >> Since salvation is found only in the name "Jesus",

>> Since Jesus Christ abides in Word of God, the Words in bible works like a double edged sword. When we sin our soul is enslaved by evil spirits. This sword cuts all the way in between our soul and evil spirit and delivers our soul, (Heb 4:12) because Jesus is our Shepherd and keeper of our soul. (1 Pet 2:25)

Yes dear believers, it is only "Jesus Christ" who dwells in his Words with his mighty power (Jh1:1) can protect us from our weakness, and strengthen our inner-self if we thirst for his protection. He will transform us inwardly; for his words says; "Now I will make you as stubborn and as tough they are (evil spirits are). I will make you as firm as a rock, as hard as a diamond in your inner-self to resist and fight against evil spirits which are luring you to fall in sin."(Ezkl 3:8-9)

Here, Jesus gives a promise that; he will fill us with his grace and power to remain firm in our inner-self. Now let us understand how Christ's Words will transform our inner-self so that we become strong against our weaknesses and desires which makes us to indulge in sin repeatedly. "Jesus Christ" said; When I go I will not leave you as orphans (Jh 14:18) I will ask the Father and he will give another helper the Holy Spirit. (Jh14:16)

The helper, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name will teach you everything, (Jth 14:26) and fill you with fruits of the Holy Spirit (Gal 5:22). The richness and power in fruits of the Spirit (Col 3:16) will strengthen us in our inner-self and fill us with power/grace to resist our desires to commit sin. **Yes, the Holy Spirit will strengthen us and make us as an Iron Pillar (Jer 1:19-20) and a Bronze Wall (Jer 15:19-20) against all our desires & weaknesses. Thus the Spirit will help us to get rid of our sinfulness.**

WILL THE FRUITS OF HOLY SPIRIT GIVE POWER OVER SIN?

At this juncture, it is very important for us to remember; It was the Holy Spirit which anointed the disciples on the day of "Pentecost," gave power & transformed them as Loyal Soldiers of Jesus Christ. (Is 13:3) It was the Holy Spirit who filled them with power & grace to witness Christ to the ends of the earth even against threat for their life. Such spiritual transformation took place in disciple's life because the fruits of the Spirit transformed them inwardly. The fruits of the Spirit will also transform you inwardly, (Rom 12:1-2) and empower you with the authority. (Luk 10:19, Mat 18:18 & Wis 6:20-21) With this authority you can rule over your sinful desires and weaknesses which are abusing you to commit sin repeatedly. This spiritual processes is explained below.

How will fruits of the Spirit give power to overcome sin?

Fruit 1- LOVE: Selfish attitude is a great weakness which is the root cause for all sin & crime. This attitude gives birth to conceitedness, miserliness, anger, greed, jealousy, pride, envy, enmity, vengeance and revenge, which causes you to fall in sin and live as slaves for these negative attitudes. It makes people rivals and bring animosity. These negative attitudes bring division with-in family, separates our family from rest of relatives, and brings separation amongst good friends and within society. It makes you to live in gloom/darkness, destroys your family life, good friendship, and removes the feeling of togetherness in family and society.

But if you allow the fruit of the Spirit 'love' to work in you, it will burn up all these negative attitudes and refresh your mind with selfless love. This fruit "love" will burn up all negative impulses in you and bring in positive attributes such as loving, caring, sharing, generosity, accepting others and make life a celebration. Such change in attitude will make your worship real and meaningful for God said; "No one has ever seen God. But if you love one another, God lives in union with us and his love is made perfect in us."(1 John 4:12) *This fruit Love will empower you to rule over all the negative attitudes which are causing you to live in sin.*

Fruit 2 - JOY: Sadness and sorrow are deadly weapons the Satan uses against children of God to take away joy that the Lord gives. Sadness and sorrow will immerse you in depression and destroy the atmosphere in your family & surroundings. To remain sad always is a sin against God's will for you. Because, God said; "rejoice in the Lord always. Again I say rejoice". (Phil 4:4) He said; "Be Joyful always, pray continually and give thanks in all circumstances, for this is what is God's will for you in Christ".(1 Thess 5:16) If you are living in sorrow at all-time due to death of loved one, you disobey God who said; *"do not mourn for dead for more than two days. Grief can undermine your health and even lead to your own death" (Sir 38:16-23)*

If you are sad and depressed because you have lost wealth, or you have not received wealth what you should have received, to you the Holy Spirit gives a message that; "It is God who gives wealth to any one he chooses and blesses, for his words says; "By my great power and strength I created this world, mankind and all the animals that live on earth, and I give it to any one whom I choose".(Jer 27:5) Unless you are chosen by God to possess that wealth, you will never have if even if you strive hard for it. Similarly if you are sad and depressed due to any past unfortunate events, such as; you could not achieve what you wanted, (or) any bad experiences (or) someone has hurt you badly (or) some event that happened long ago which has changed the course of your life, then you disobey God who said; *"Do not cling to the events of the past or dwell on what happened long ago. Watch out for new things I am going to do. It is happening already-you can see it now. I will make roads through the wilderness and give you streams of water there". (Is 43:18) Further God warns you; "Do not deliberately torture yourself by giving in for depression. Happiness makes it for a long life and makes life worth living. Enjoy yourself and be happy; do not worry at all time. It will make you old before time. (Sir 30:21-24).*

If you allow the Holy Spirit to work in you, he will give you wisdom to understand the following;

>>That; "How precious you are in the eyes of God"? (Is 43:4-5)

>>That; "How precious is your time to spend it with God to experience his presence and remain joy full"? (1 Pet 1:8-9)

>>That; "How pleasing it is to God, if you accept his will and glorify him in everything we do"? (1 Cor 6:19-20)

The Holy Spirit will give you grace to accept everything that has happened in your past, and what is presently happening in your life, because, God is in control of everything happening in your life. The Holy Spirit will give you understanding that; "God does not refuse anything good for you", (Ps 84:11) because "God dose every good for those who love him."(Rom 8:28) **By filling you with Grace to understand and accept these spiritual truths** the Holy Spirit will change your sorrow into Joy. (Jh 16; 16-22) By filling you with his grace, Holy Spirit will empower you to rule over your sadness and sorrow which are destroying your life, your family and causing you to live in sin against the command; "rejoice in the Lord always"(Phil 4:4) and "be joyful always in his presence"(Ps 16:11 & Jh 15:11)

Fruit-3 PEACE: You lose peace when you are deeply disturbed in your mind. When you lose peace you get agitated over small/trivial issues which cause restlessness. This will have a very bad repercussion on your relation with-in family and with others. When you lose peace, it greatly affects your health. Because, when your mind is disturbed it affects secretion of enzymes in your body, which in turn affects normal function of organs leading to bad health. You land in this awful situation because you have not accepted Jesus Christ who is the "Prince of Peace" in your heart in all sincerity. (Is 9:7-9) The Prince of Peace-Jesus said; "Peace is what I leave with you; it is my own peace I give to you. I do not give it as the world does. Do not be worried & upset; do not be afraid. (Jh 14:27)

When you disregard Jesus and his words to live life as per the desires of your mind and passions of body you are bound to lose peace. This is a very dangerous situation which will drive you to find peace in things which are created by the Creator than to find peace in the Creator himself. Nowadays, people who know Christ, look for peace beyond Christ. They look for peace outside the teachings of Word of God. Believers in Christ go to different people, different places to consult different counsellors who study stars and map heavenly bodies for their movements to predict future and

counsel believers. These astrologers & counsellors advice believers/ Christians to depend on zodiac signs & astrology, indulge in idol worship, pagan worship, witchcraft and black magic to find peace.

This is how 'Peace-less mind' drives you to commit sin against first two Commandments of the Ten Commandments which are; "I am the Lord your God who brought you out of Egypt where you were slaves. 'Let there be no God for you other than me". Do not make yourselves images of anything in heaven or on earth or in water under the earth. Do not bow down to any idol and worship it. Because I am the Lord your God who tolerates no rivals. (Ex 20:1-5) In spite of indulging such unholy worship to find peace, you still will not find peace within you. Many have taken drastic decision to end life by suicide. This is how the Satan will deceive your mind to destroy you. Yes the Satan comes to steal, kill and destroy your life. (Jh 10:10)

Peace-less situation is a satanic influence upon you to destroy your blessings. People who are lost for peace indulge in sinful life when they look for peace outside teachings of Scriptures. But in such situations, if you decide to remain with the Holy Spirit, the Spirit will give you wisdom to understand the truth. "The truth is; "Christ is key who opens all the treasures of God's wisdom and knowledge". (Col 2:3) This knowledge will give you understanding on God's plan; "which is to make known his people the rich and glorious secret he has for all people. And the secret is that Christ is in you; which means you will share in the glory of God". (Col 1:27) This means you will have share the peace that the "Prince of Peace" Jesus Christ offers.

The Holy Spirit will give you conviction and grace to understand that Jesus Christ in you! He will also give you wisdom to explore the peace that abides in Christ who is living in you, (1 Cor 3:16-17) because Christ is the Prince of Peace. (Is 9:6-7) Yes, you will have peace by being united with Christ. Jesus said; "I am not alone, because, the Father is in me. I have told you this so that you will have peace by being united in me. The world will make you suffer (The people of the world will destroy your peace). But be brave (be united with me) I have defeated the world. (Jh 16:33) St Paul said; "God's peace which is far beyond human understanding will keep your hearts and minds safe in union with Christ", which means you will experience Christ's peace in you.(Phil 4:7) And, 'Peace' that Christ gives will guide us in decisions you make. (Col 3:15) Your decisions will be guided by his Spirit. When your decisions are guided by his Spirit, you will live life pleasing God and hence God's peace will rest in you. Yes, God's peace will abide in you.

This is how the Holy Spirit will help you to experience peace that Christ offers. There-by you will trust God in all situations and will not look for peace outside Scriptures and commit sin against God.

Fruit 4 - PATIENCE: Impatience is a state of mind which drives one make hasty decisions and take hasty actions there-by he loses blessings that are reserved for him in God's Plan.

Yes, you lose patience when you are in hurry to do a thing prematurely without praying over your actions, for God said; "Ask the Lord to bless your actions /plans so that you will be successful in carrying them out". (Prov 16:3) Hasty actions causes you to commit sin and lose blessing. Yes, you lose patients when we are young, energetic and filled with pride. You also lose patience when you are irritated, when you are sick, when you are emotionally upset, when you are angry, when you have lost the most desired thing in life. When you lose patience, you lose grace to think and act. Such hasty actions makes your decisions go wrong, the words that you give out go wrong, and your actions go wrong. Finally the path you choose to travel also goes wrong. In your impatience you lose grace to endure trials that you undergo which will cause you to fall in faith.

The prodigal son lost patience to inherit the father's property.

In hastiness he chose a wrong path in life and lost all blessings. (Luk 15:11-30) Many of us lose our blessings and good life because we could not observe patience in life and wait upon the Lord. Since we lose patience, we are in a hurry to do things prematurely. For example a person who has no patience to wait for marriage to enjoy the pleasures of love, indulges in premarital sex. Thus he disobeys God's commandment in marriage. In this disobedience he loses the blessings that God had reserved for him according to his plan. (Jer 29:11) God speaks about blessings in obedience in the book Duet 28:1-14. In disobedience he exposes himself for curse that are pronounced in disobedience, as we read in Duet 27:11-26. In Scriptures we also read how a righteous man waited upon the Lord to inherit his blessings. Joseph a righteous man was seduced by the Queen of Egypt. But he did not lose patience to give-in for sinful pleasures. He rejected the Queens's sinful offer for which he was falsely accused by the Queen and put in prison. But, God was with Joseph all through his trials and finally blessed him to become the Governor of Egypt. (Gen Chap 39-41)

The Satan uses your impulsiveness/impatience to tempt & lure you in sin and destroys your physical life, marital life and spiritual life. The Satan destroys your blessings which God has

prepared for you in his original plan. (Jer 29:11) Because you do not wait upon God (Ps 46:10) and pray over your actions, (Prove 16:3) you are driven by your impulsiveness to indulge in sin, and lose God's blessing. Similarly, if you are a person who is enduring chronic sickness, if you lose patience to wait upon God to inherit blessing through sufferings, you will lose blessings. You lose patience and gives up faith in God and try to find solutions for your sickness through faith outside teachings of Bible. It displeases God. And you lose blessings that God has prepared for you as per his plan.

But if you pray to the Holy Spirit he will bless you with abundance of patience that will increase your capacity to endure all trials and fill you with grace to wait for God chosen time (Ecc 3:1-9) to do things and achieve much more than what your mind can ever think-off or what you can ever imagine, in every area of your life. St Paul said; "what no one ever saw or heard, what no one ever thought could happen is the very thing God prepared of those who love him and wait upon him". (1 Cor 2:9) Such blessings will come upon you if you trust in the Lord in all circumstances and wait upon him to act, patiently praying to him with thankful heart. (Phil 4:6) The Lord is good to everyone who trust him. So it is best for you to wait in patience-to wait for him to save you - And it is best to learn this patience in your youth. (Lem 3:25-27) King David said; "Be patient and wait for the Lord to act; do not be worried about the people who prosper or those who succeed in their evil plan". (Ps 37:7) Prophet Isiah said; "Those wait upon the Lord for help will find their strength renewed. They will raise on wings like eagles; they will run and not get weary; they will walk and not grow weak. (Is 40:31) ***This is how God will bless those who wait upon him patiently. The Holy Spirit will fill you with abundance of patience which will guide you to inherit blessing what God has planned for you as per his original plan.***

Fruit-5: KINDNESS: Un-Courteous attitude is a weakness which will cause us to fall in sin by being cruel and inhuman to our brothers and sisters who are made in the image of God. Such behaviour is against the teachings of Christ which are;

"Love your brother as you love yourself." (Mk 12:31)

"Accept one another as I have accepted you." (Rom 15:7)

"Do to others what you expect them to do to you. (Mat 7:12)

"It is kindness that God wants, not your sacrifice." (Mat 9:13)

Such behaviour in us will portray us as ungodly people. Being Christians we must extend courteous behaviour to our neighbour, relatives, siblings, parents and friends. Christians who display rude

behaviour tarnish the image of Christ. Thus believers fall in the eyes of the community they live-in. Non-Christians come to compromise dispute that Christians have with their siblings and parents. It reflects the weakness with-in ourselves, which is lack of kindness to accept one another as Christ has accepted us.

The root cause why people display cruel/inhuman behaviour is; they have been hurt in their soul in the past. *Their soul have received injury, may be due to cruel treatment they may have received in the past. Especially in their childhood, they may have been abused physically & sexually. Also their mother may have been treated cruelly by close relatives, during the time of confinement. Due to cruel treatment meted out to their mother, the child in the confinement would have been affected psychologically. This hurt is in sub-conscious mind of the unborn child will display un-courteous behaviour when the child reach adulthood. People who have been hurt in this manner will display inhuman behaviour to others to take out frustration. They themselves will not know why they display such behaviour. This hurt in their soul is known as 'inner hurt'. They need to be treated psychologically. They need to be healed in their soul. By the power of Holy Spirit they will be healed. They will receive the gift of kindness to accept one another as Christ has accepted us.*

Only the Holy Spirit can reach out to the past life of people, heal them and take away the inner hurts and bring kindness in their mind through the Spirit of love. For the Lord had promised;

>> "I am the Lord who heal you" (Ex 15:26)

>> "He heals the broken-hearted & bandages wounds" (Ps 147:3)

>> "The Lord is near to those who are broken hearted, he saves those who have lost all hope." (Ps 34:18)

>> Further God said; "I will look for those who are lost, bring back those that have wandered off, bandage those that hurt and heal those that are sick in soul. Because I am the good Shepherd who does what is right. (Ezkl 34:16)

>> The Holy Spirit will reach every area of our life, heal our past and light up new life in us with full of kindness for "his Love gives us New Life." (Zeph 3:17)

>> The Holy Spirit can reach in to our past life and set everything that are in brokenness because he is the same yesterday, today and for ever. (Heb 13:8 & Malachi 3:6)

Fruit 6 - GOODNESS: Being bad to others is displaying our weakness. People display pride, hate feeling, grudge, unforgiving attitude, insulting and indifferent attitude which destroys everything

in them and in others. However good we are to such people who have these negative attitudes, they will still display foul behaviour. People who display such foul behaviour will never be at peace within themselves. They can never be at peace with their loved ones and with outsiders. They will never change though we make an attempt to counsel them. The root cause for such behaviour is, they feel inferior within themselves when they see progress made by people around them. To overcome their inferior complex they insult others and fight with everyone to feel that they are superior to others.

They feel inferior to others because they want to be recognised as some one big in society. But they are not recognised as someone important for various reasons. This disappointment depress them and pushes them to feel inferior to others. Such people look for recognition from man and not from God. Such people cling on to events of the past. (Is 43:18) They create confusion in family because, they cannot forgive people on past incidence. This inferior complex is a satanic infliction which will never allow them to understand how God looks at them or where they stand in eyes of the Lord. This infliction does not allow them to remain at peace within themselves nor with others. They display bad behaviour because they can neither accept others nor can forgive others. It leads to unforgiving attitude which is the greatest disobedience to the teachings of Jesus. (Mat 6:14-15, Eph 4:32 & Col 3:13)

The Holy Spirit will fill him with abundance of grace (power) which will deliver him from this satanic infliction, because; "wherever the Spirit of God is present, there is complete freedom from all bondages." (2 Cor 3:17) The Holy Spirit will give him wisdom to realise his importance in the eyes of God, that, "he is precious in the eyes of God", (Is 43:4-5) and that, "God accepts him as his dearest and loving son as God said; "Israel, you are my dearest son, the child whom I love the best. Whenever I mention your name, I think of you with love. My heart goes out to you; I will be merciful." (Jer 31:20)

God reiterates the importance of this person in his eyes. He says, "You are the chosen generation the King's Priest, the holy nation, and God's own people, chosen to proclaim the wonderful acts of God, who has called you out of darkness into his marvellous light". (1 Pet 2:9) Thus, God recognises the importance of every person on earth." The presence of Holy Spirit will surely remove inferior complex and make them to realise their importance in eyes of God and live with conviction that they are chosen by God and that God wants to use them in his eternal plan for salvation. (2 Tim 2:21)

This is how Holy Spirit will deliver a person from his inferior complex, make him feel good and important in eyes of God. The Holy Spirit will transform him to live very good life in his society accepting others and live in harmony by forgiving others for past incidences. God said; "Do not cling to the events of the past or dwell on what happened long ago. Watch out for new things I am going to do. It is happening already. You can see it now. I will make roads through wilderness and give streams of water there" (Is 43:18). Here God is giving us a promise to help us and to transform us in our weakness so that we display goodness in our behaviour and attitude.

Fruit 7 - HUMILITY: Pride is a very dangerous weakness which keeps God and man away from each other. When a man rejects God, pride enters his heart. God hates the site of a proud man. (Pro 16:5) Pride was the cause for fall of one third angels from heaven. When pride entered Lucifer, he refused to bow down to worship his Creator. Pride has been the cause for fall of many kings. God said; "Do not do anything out of pride. Arrogance and injustice are both hated by the Lord and man. Pride causes nations to fall. Pride has its beginning when a person abandons the Lord. Pride is a fountain pouring out sin. That's why the Lord brought terrible punishment upon some people. The Lord has overthrown empires and completely devastated their lands". (Sir 10:6-18) We displease God when we are swollen with pride and invite wrath of the Lord upon us.

Pride has destroyed many persons, families, and good relations. *Pride brings separation with-in family and with-in community. Pride does not encourage fellowship. God did not accept prayer raised by Pharisees who were boasting in pride about their fasting & payment of tithes. But the prayer raised by a sinner who considered himself that he is not worthy to look up to heaven and prayed standing outside the temple in humble repentance was accepted by God.* (Luk 18:9-14) ***Pride has been the cause for the downfall of many. Pride is a grievous sin against God.***

The Lord hates and cannot tolerate a proud look (Prov 6:16) But he said; "My power is great, and I am honoured by those who are humble." (Sir 3:20) That's why God said; "I live with people who are humble and repentant." (Is 57:15) Christ said; "I am gentle and humble in Spirit. (Mat 11:19) The Holy Spirit gave humility to Mother Mary to humble herself before God when angel Gabriel gave her the message about birth of Christ and that; "she would be the mother of God". (Luk 1:26-38) Because Mary was humble she said; "I am the hand maid of God, servant of God; Let it happen to me according to

thy will.”(Luk 1:38) The Holy Spirit gave humbleness to Jesus to obey his Father in heaven to undergo his passions and die on the cross for the Salvation of the mankind. (Mk 14:35-36 & Phil 2:6-11) The Holy Spirit will also give you the fruit “humility” for you to surrender your pride which is causing you to live in sin. *The Holy Spirit produces humility in you which helps to overcome your weakness ‘pride’ and live a humble life that pleases the Lord; because he said:*

>> *“Show constant love to fellow human beings and live in humble fellowship with God”. (Micah 6:8)*

>> *“I am the high and holy God, who live for ever. I live in high and holy place. But I also live with people who are humble and repentant, so that I can restore their confidence and hope. (Is 57:15)*

Fruit 8 - FAITHFULNESS: Unfaithful attitude is a weakness which will break trust and confidence in good relations. We may display unfaithfulness in relation with our spouse, or in our relation with our children, or it may be in our relation with our relatives, or it may be unfaithfulness in our relation with our employer, or it may in our relation be with our employees / subordinates, or it may be by betraying our Country by divulging its secrets to other Nations. Finally, it may be unfaithfulness in our relation with God.

By being unfaithful, we lose goodness in human relations. We live good life only by establishing good relations with people and with God. We commit sin against man by being unfaithful. It may be to our spouse by committing adultery, or it may be our employer when we do not do our duty religiously, or, by working against the employer to divulge his trade secret, or, by deliberately giving wrong decisions with a motive to cause damage to his property / finance. If we become unfaithful in our dealings with men we break trust that others repose on us. It is a sin for us.(Sir 27:16-21, & Prov 25:9, 19)

In unfaithfulness we commit sin against God, when we repose faith on anything that are created by him rather to repose faith in the Creator himself. Yes, people turn away from God. They know God but they do not give honour to him. To find help, healing, guidance, protection, prosperity, and good future they worship images/idols which are made by human hands. They also worship living beings, animals, reptiles and birds. (Rom 1:21-24, Jer 10:1-10, Is 44:9-20 & 7:10-15) Thus they commit sin against God’s commandments given to us in Ex 20:1-5. All these only shows that we live a sinful life by being unfaithful to God and people around us. But the Holy Spirit will change our heart and give us a loyal, faithful and obedient heart. Yes, he will give you a new heart and new mind. He will take

away your stubborn heart of stone and give you an obedient heart. (Ezkl 11:19 & 36:26) The Holy Spirit will fill you with the Spirit of faithfulness, there-by you will live a life faithful to God and men.

Fruit 9 - SELF CONTROL: **Lack of self-control in man is the greatest weakness** which the Satan uses very powerfully to destroy all his blessings and to enslave him as slave for sin. We have come to the most important characteristic of human behaviour which is; "lack of self-control" over emotions and inner-desires which makes man commit sin repeatedly. The present world is so attractive and inviting that man finds it extremely challenging to exercise self-control over himself and on his desires to commit sin. This is the greatest challenge that Church is facing today.

Lack of self-control over anger will lead to self-destruction and destruction of all blessings that God has given us. Due to uncontrollable anger people have killed their loved ones, have committed suicide, have burnt themselves and in many ways have done damage to their own body which is the temple of Holy Spirit. (1 Cor 3:16-17) People have destroyed what they have made through earnings of hard labour. There are many, many such instances where people out of their uncontrollable anger have destroyed what God had blessed them. **God rebuked man said; "There is no reason for un controllable anger"**

God said; "if you become angry, do not let your anger lead you to sin. And, do not allow sun to go down in your anger because the Satan will separate you from your loved one and destroy your family life. (Eph 4:26-27) Because, "man's anger does not achieve God's righteous purpose" (Jas 1:20)" God says; be patient & wait for the Lord to act; don't give in for anger, it will only lead you to trouble. (Ps 37:7-8) If you pray to Holy Spirit, he will bless you with Spirit of patience. He will give grace to control anger & protect you and all your blessings. **There is no reason for uncontrollable anger. The Satan will use your uncontrollable anger 'which is your weakness' to destroy your life & family.**

Lack of self-control over your thoughts will lead you to live a sinful life. Jesus said; anyone who looks at a women and desires to possess her is guilty of committing adultery in his heart," because he has desired her in his thoughts. (Mat5:28) If you do not exercise control over your thoughts, you will become a captive for selfish desires and a slave for greed. God said; you must put to death, then, the earthly desires at work in your thoughts, such as sexual

immorality, indecency, lust, evil passions and greed, for greed is a form of idolatry. (Col 3:5) If you do not discipline your thoughts, it will lead us to live sinful life. God said; "If you discipline your thoughts and be willing to learn, you will be kept safe in this life and will be granted mercy after death" (2 Esdras 14:34)

Lack of self-control in eyes will bring greed & dissatisfaction.

If you do not exercise caution in what you see and check your intentions, then lust, jealousy and envy will rule you. Your eyes will lust for attractive women/men and will lead you in sexual sins. If you are not satisfied with beauty of your spouse, it will destroy family life. If you abuse your eyes reading sinful literatures, and watching pornography, these sins will plunge your soul in darkness. You will always experience sadness / depression with-in you because your soul will be squirming in darkness. Further these habits will drive you to indulge in sexual sins. Your eyes will never allow you to live happy & contented with what you have. That is why Jesus said; "if your eyes are sound, your whole body will be lit up. If your eyes are no good, your whole body will be in darkness. (Luk 11:34-36)

Lack of self-control over our tongue will cause hurt to others & destroy them. (Prov 15:4) People give false witness and destroy others life. People gossip, spread rumours and destroy others life. Many relations & friendships have been broken because of wounding words. (Prov 11:9). God said; "A wound caused by harmful words is deadlier than a wound caused by a sword". (Prov 12:18) People avoid speaking to a person who has foul mouth. **Our tongue is a world of wrong occupying its place in our body.** It spreads evil through our whole being. It sets on fire the entire course of our existence with the fire that comes from hell itself. No one has ever been able to tame their tongue. It is evil, uncontrollable, and full of deadly poison. (Jas 3:6-8) It lights fire in others life. But the Holy Spirit will give grace to control tongue if you are determined and pray to him.

Lack of self-control in actions will destroy good relation and your life. God said; "Love your neighbour as you love thyself". But if you act like wild animals, hurting and harming each other, then watch out, or you will completely destroy one other." (Gal 5:14-15) Irrational actions, harmful actions and revengeful actions will destroy your loved ones/neighbours. Also it will subject you to the Law of the Land there by you will be punished severely and lose all your freedom. "It is better to have patients than to be powerful. It is better to win control over yourself than win control over others" (Prov 16:32) It is very important to think twice before we act. It is wise to

pray to the Lord to bless your actions so that all that you do are successful and brings harmony and peace. (Prov 16:3) If you are sincere and want to establish peace, and pray to Holy Spirit, he will change situations to bring peace and make your life peaceful.

Lack of self-control in worship will deceive your mind to worship of idols and things that are created than to worship the Creator himself. Yes, the Satan deceives peoples mind to worship images, idols, animals, birds, reptiles, living beings, demons, and leads them to offer human sacrifice on Pagan's Altar. If you are not with truth (Christ) then you will be led away from Christ (truth), and your mind will lead you to sin against Ten Commandments. Such stupidity will destroy your faith. Such sinful life will lead your soul to eternal damnation/condemnation. (Rom 1:20-23) That's why God said; "Trust in the Lord with all your heart. Never rely on your own understanding. Remember the Lord in everything you do, and he will show you the right path in worship." (Prove 3:5-6) *But when the Holy Spirit comes he will give us the Spirit of self-control. This Spirit will strengthen us in every weakness and burn up all the sinful desires which are causing us to indulge in sin repeatedly.*

This Spirit will fill us with grace which will strengthen us to gain control over every weak areas of our life. We will become strong like a rock and a diamond to against our sinful-self. (Ezkl 3:8-9) Yes, we will be transformed in our inner-self and will become like an Iron pillar and a Bronze wall against all our weakness and desires for sin. (Jer 1:18-19) God has promised to give us sure foundation in our spiritual life. (1 Pet 5:10) This sure foundation will change the way we live. Our weaknesses and desires for sin will fight against us to lure us to sin. But they will not defeat us because Holy Spirit will be with us to give us victory. (Jer 15: 19-20) The Holy Spirit will deliver us. And the deliverance will be final. Our victory will be final. (Is 50:6-7) We will be transformed into a new being in Christ, experiencing fullness of Christ (Col 2:6-23) and live a new life in Spirit. (Col 3:1-17)

GOD GUTRANTEES FREEDOM FROM ALL YOUR SINFUL WEAKNESSES.

God promises guarantees you freedom from weaknesses because, you belong to him alone! Yes Dear believer, your relation with God was established as; "Father and son," (Is 31:20) when "God's mark of ownership was put on you on the day of baptism. (Jh 3: 5, Eph 4:4-6, Gal 3:27) Baptism is a guarantee that

a day will come when God will set you free. (Eph 4:30) God refers here "The 'Day' as "the day on which you humbly return to God in true repentance", looking for God's help to free yourselves from all our weaknesses as we read above.

St Paul said; "God has brought you into union with Christ Jesus, and God has made Christ to be your wisdom. By him you are put right with God & you become God's holy child and set free from all your weaknesses. (1 Cor 1:30) This means; you become free from your weaknesses such as; bodily passions, desires, hateful feelings, bitterness, anger, shouting, insulting words, immoral filthy & indecent actions, worship of idols, witchcraft, enmity, separation, fight, jealousy, being proud & ambitious, drinking, indulging in orgy and other evil bondages.

When you sincerely acknowledge your weakness and surrender to God for help, observe regular fasting (on Fridays), and pray to him for deliverance from all weaknesses, the Lord who sees your heart and how you act will show you favour. He will surely fill you with his grace and strengthen you in all weak areas of your life. You will become an Iron pillar and Bronze against sin. (Jer 1:18-19 & 15:19-21) Your weaknesses and sinful desires cannot defeat you, for God will be with you to fight for you. God will give you victory which he promised.(Is 51:6-8)

GOD'S OFFER FOR PROTECTION IN SPIRITUAL LIFE.

Our God said; "I the LORD will be their God, and a king like my servant David, will be their ruler. I have spoken. I will make a covenant with them that guarantees their security. I will get rid of all the wild animals (evil spirits) in the land. So that my sheep can live safely in the fields and sleep in forests". (Ezkl 34:24-25) If you are sincere in your thoughts and actions, and return to the Lord with a broken and repentant heart (Ps 51:17) the Lord will not reject you. (Heb 13:5) For he said; "For a brief moment I forsake you (due to wickedness); but with great compassion I will gather you."(When you repent truly). (Is 54:7)

Dear believers, by the power of death of Christ on the cross, (as we read Col 2:15) we receive power to remain free from sin and to worship the LORD in Spirit and Truth. (Jh 4:24) God gives us assurance that he will protect us from all satanic attacks which comes in the form of temptations. Our sins binds us with invisible chains and enslaves as captives and prisoners for our weaknesses, there-by

we lose freedom in our Heart & Soul. *But God promises to break these invisible chains to set us free and give freedom from our sinful-self.*

YES, OUR LORD PROMISES TO DELIVER US. HE SAID;

>> Israel, "even though the Assyrians are strong and numerous they will be destroyed and disappear. My people I made you suffer. I will not do it again. I will now end the power of Assyrians over you and break the chains that bind you". (Nahum 1:12-13)

>>Further God promised; "When I break my people's chains and set them free from those who made them slaves, they will know that I am the Lord."(Ezkl 34:27)

>> Lord is faithful to all his promises. (2 Tim 2: 13)

>> He will keep is covenant forever and his promises for generations. (Ps 105:8)

>>The one who called you will do it (to give freedom from Sin) (Thess 5:24)

>> "The Creator who created you will never leave you or abandon you." (Heb13:15)

>>Because; "He is our Shepherd and keeper of our Souls". (Ps 23 & 1 Peter 2:25) And, "His Love is strong and his faithfulness is eternal." (Psalm 117:2)

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.**

QUESTIO NO-13

HOW TO AVOID AND OVERCOME TEMPTATIONS AND SIN?

CAN WE OVERCOME TEMPTATIONS BY BEING UNITED WITH CHRIST?

We have understood that we receive freedom from our sinful-self through the Promises of God and by the Power of the Holy Spirit. Even though you receive freedom from your weakness for sin and desires for flesh, temptations will continue to trouble us as long as we live on this earth. Yes, nearer to God more will be the temptations. Since the Satan does not like to lose hold on your soul he will continue his efforts to lure you to commit sin.

This struggle with temptations will continue till we die. That's why Jesus said;" Be on Guard, and do not let anyone deceive you"(Mark 13:5,9, 23 and 35) Jesus continued to say; "so long you live on this earth there will be temptations and sufferings" as we read in the following Word of God;

>> *"No one is greater than his master. If they persecute me (if the Satan tempted me) they will persecute you too (the Satan will tempt you too). (Jh 15:20)*

>> *"Keep watch and pray that you may not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak" (Mk 14:38)*

>> *"In the Gospel of Mark Jesus warns us four times saying; "be on guard"; don't let anyone deceive you. Many claiming to speak for me will come and say, I am he! And they will deceive many people" (Mk 13:5, 9, 23 & 35)*

>> *Further Jesus said; "You will have peace by being united in me. The world will make you suffer (through temptations). But be brave! I have defeated the world (I have overcome all my temptations) (Jn16:33)*

>>**God said:** *"In this earthly life, we are not fighting against human being but against wicked spiritual forces in the heavenly world, the rulers, authorities, and the cosmic powers of this dark age". (Eph 6:12)_To fight against the satanic forces, God gave his armour to protect ourselves and stand ground.*

HOW DOES THE ARMOUR OF GOD HELP TO OVERCOME TEMPTATIONS?

Armours that God gave to fight against the powers of darkness as written in Eph 6:12-18 which are explained below;

Armour-1. Stand with Truth: (Eph 6:14) ***Stand ready with "Truth" as a belt around your waist.*** The Scriptures refers Jesus Christ as Truth. (Jh 8:32). So, remain united with Jesus always by reading his words and by meditating on them. (Sir 6:37) If you do so, you will continue to experience his power flowing in you to strengthen you to overcome all your weaknesses which lures you to commit sin. Jesus said; you can do nothing on your own. (Jh 15:4) But you can do all things with Christ who strengthens you. (Phil 4:13)

You have to remain united with Jesus to live this spiritual life because, you are the branch and Christ is the tree. By being united with Christ through his words, you will get nourishment (power and grace) to fight this spiritual battle against evil spirits. (Jh 15:5-7) When you endure in this fight against the devil, you will be enlightened on various ways/methods how the evil spirits are constantly working to deceive you. At this juncture, if you are united to Christ, he will teach you the path that you should follow. (Is 30:20-21) He will make you as stubborn & hard as the evil spirits are. He will make you as firm as a rock & as hard as a diamond so that evil spirits cannot win over you. (Ezkl 3:8-9)

Christ will never allow you to be defeated in this spiritual battle because, he is faithful to all his promises. (2 Cor 1:20) *When you enrich yourself with his Words, by the richness and power that dwells in the Word, (Cl 3:16) you will come to know more about "Truth" (Christ) and this "Truth" (power of Christ) will set you free" from all temptations. (Jh 8:32) You will soon realise that temptations has no power to make you fall. Because, God is faithful to his promises. (2 Tim 2:13) He will strengthen you & keep you safe from the evil one. (2 Thess 3:3)*

Dear believer, allow Christ to take control every area of your life to feel his protection and power to win over temptations and tribulations. Christ is waiting to enter your life for he said; "I stand and knock at the door; if anyone hears my voice and open the door, I will come in to his house and eat with him and he will eat with me. (Rev 3:20)

Armour-2. Righteousness as breast plate: (Eph 6:14) If you live 'Righteous life', your righteousness will come to us as your breast plate to protect you. The breastplate protects vital organs in the body of a soldier in battle. Similarly, your righteousness will protect vital organs of your spiritual body in the battle against the evil spirits. The vital organs of your spiritual body are; faith, anointment, fruits of Spirit, the gifts of the Holy Spirit, and your physical body, which is the temple of the Holy Spirit. (1 Cor 3:16-17) To know what is righteous life, please read Ps 15:1-6, Ezkl 18:5-9 and Is 58:6-12.

God said; "Your security comes from your righteousness and your splendour from your devotion to me." (Baruch 5:4) So make sure that you live righteous life to gain upper hand over Satan.

Armour-3. Readiness to announce Good news as shoes: (Eph 6:15) "Be filled with message of Christ in your heart and be ready to announce it to the world". (Mat 28:19) This includes preaching, counselling, and leading people in praise and worship.

>> If you preach Word of God, those words will lift you in Spirit and make your life joyful. (Jer 15:16) When you preach the word your save both yourself and those who hear you.(1 Tim 4 13-16)

>> If you counsel others with word of God, those words which you use for counselling others will also counsel you and help to get over of problems that you encounter. (2Cor 1:4-5)

>> If you sing Lord's praises, and lead people in praise & worship the Lord who dwells in your praises will deliver you from all fears and break all the invisible chains that are binding you (Ps23:3)

>>If you make it a practice to announce the words, counsel believers and sing praises, you will experience God's permanent presence in you. (2 Pet 1:10) God's permanent presence will bring continuous spiritual renewal in you. This spiritual renewal will remove all fears and also every day renew your faith in Christ, which the Satan is trying to destroy. Thus; you receive courage and conviction to grow firm in spiritual life and do God's will in salvation against all difficulties, sufferings even against threat to your life.

>> This continuous spiritual renewal with in you will strengthen your hope in Salvation and God will bless you with sure foundation in faith. (1 Pet 5:10)

>> Further as a part of announcing Good News, if you practice your faith by laying hand on sick people, bind the evil spirits

using word of God, (Mark 15:17-18) your spiritual life will receive solid foundation. Also, you will become proud and confident soldier of Christ. (Is 13:3) You will gain inner strength, courage which will protect you in your struggle against temptations & overcome sin.

Armour- 4. Use Faith as Shield: (Eph 6:16) The Satan is a cunning beast who is trying with all his tricks to destroy your faith in Christ. Because, the Satan knows that Jesus fights for those children who has faith in him to save them from the power of sin. For he promised:

>> "I am the Good Shepherd who is willing to die for my sheep" (Jh 10:7-16)

>> "Jesus has promised eternal life to all his believers who has faith in him."(Jh 11:25)

>> He said; "I will never leave you or forsake you" (Heb 13:5)

>> Father he promised; "Whoever believes in me will not be disappointed for their eternal life."(Rom 10:11)

To keep the fire of faith burning at all time we need to indulge in disciplined spiritual life.

>> **The first discipline is to worship the Lord before sunrise** between 3 and 6 AM. If you seek the face of the Lord before sunrise, by rejecting your early morning sleep, the Lord who sees your desire for his presence, will fill you with Spirit of Wisdom. This Sprit of wisdom will strengthen your faith.

>> **The second discipline is to read Word of God before sunrise** and continue reading his words whenever you find time during the day. Because, faith comes from hearing/reading word of God. (Rom 10:14-15)

>> **Third discipline is to make it a habit to sing praises of the Lord** in your worship, and listen to spiritual songs during the day. The Lord who dwells in your praises will enrich your faith and confidence in spiritual life. By singing praises to the Lord for seven days Joshua and his men broke the fortress wall of Jericho town.(Joshua 6:1-20) When you encounter such personal experiences, your faith will grow like mountain.

>> **Fourth discipline is to meditate on the Word of God.** (Sir 6:37) God said; "Pay attention to what I say my son. Never let my words to go away from your attention. (Keep meditating on my words) Remember them and keep them in your heart. They will give life and health to anyone who understand them". (Prov 4:20-21)

>> *These discipline will help us to grow in faith, and strengthen us in faith. **We should learn to use faith as our shield to put down burning arrows of the evil one.***

Burning arrows of the evil are those things that will easily trigger our desire to commit sin, such as; sinful memories of those dirty pictures, videos, sinful books that we saw or read in the past. Memories of past sinful relations, old sinful habits that we have given-up. Memories of forbidden worship that we have given-up. Memories of past sinful practices, such; as depending on zodiac signs, palmistry, consulting black magician, consulting astrologer, idol worship, worshipping heavenly bodies and worshipping living creatures etc.

Burning arrows of evils that will make us fall instantly in sin are; uncontrollable anger, revenge, hurting and wounding words, insults which trigger anger, impatience, restlessness, depression, sadness, cruel behaviour, pride and ego. Mediating rosary twice a day (morning & night) will prove to be a very effective protection against Satan and all its tricks. Rosary will shield us from Satan; keep him far away from us.

***We should never doubt our faith in Christ,** because the Satan is always trying to destroy our faith in Christ by various tricks. If we lose faith in Christ, we lose protection that we receive through Word of God (Christ) and through Mother Mary. Then we will be an easy target for Satan. When we stand firm in faith, with Christ as our Shepherd, and Mother Mary as our Guardian, Satan and its evil tricks cannot deceive us to fall in sin.*

Armour-5. Accept Salvation as Helmet: (Eph 6:17) If we do not accept the Salvation which Christ has offered promised us (Jh 11:5) then our life on earth is meaningless. We will live this earthly only in flesh. But God wants that we should live by his Spirit to win over the desires of flesh and conquer devil. God' words says;

>> **God loved the world so much** that he gave his only Son (as sacrifice for sins of mankind) so that everyone who believes in him may not perish but will have eternal life."(Jh 3:16)

>> **Jesus said;** "I am life resurrection and life. Whoever believes in me will live even though he dies. Whoever lives and believes in me will ever die."(His soul will receive eternal life) (Jh 11:25)

>> **St Paul said;** "God in his eternal plan will bring all creation together, everything in heaven (heavenly beings) and on earth, (human beings) with Christ as its head."(Eph 1:10) This means we will have salvation through Christ Jesus. Amen.

By accepting Salvation we discern between 'true doctrine' and false teachings spread by the devil. Further our hope in Salvation will give us tremendous conviction, confidence and courage to stand up against Devil's tricks and resist enemy's attack. After fighting to the end you will still hold your ground. (Eph 6:11 &13) So, we should never lose our faith in Salvation. If your faith endures in salvation you will also endure in this struggle till end and win victory.(Is 7:9)**Yes, faith in Word of God and hope in Salvation will act as helmet to protect your faith and life in Christ.** This will give you tremendous will power. In your tribulations you will never relent, & will never fall in faith. When your faith in Christ and hope in Salvation receives strong foundation, you will never yield for temptations.

Armour- 6. Use Word of God as a Sword: The Scriptures describes the power in Word of God as below:

>> "All creation in the universe was created by **the power in word of God**, and the word was the source of life". (Jh 1:3-4)

>> "The **word became human being full of grace and truth** and lived amongst men to give salvation."(Jh 1:14 & 3:16)

>> "The whole **universe is sustained by the power** in word of God".(Sir 43:26 & Heb1:3)

>> **Word of God is the double edged sword.** It cuts all the way through in-between where our soul and the spirit meet and deliver our soul from the invisible Chains that are binding it. (Heb 4:12) (Spirit here refers to evil spirits which have enslaved us our soul when we committed sin)

>> **St Paul said;** "Use the Word of God as a powerful weapon in your battle against devil in order to fight well". (1Tim 1:18)

>> **When Jesus was tempted by Satan** in the desert after he completed forty days fasting, Jesus countered Satan and his temptations with the Word of God. (Mat 4:1-11). When Jesus spoke Word of God, the Satan had no words to speak and he ran away from Jesus.

>> **King Solomon said:** "What a joy it is to find right word for the right occasion". (Prov 15:23)

Dear believer, you are called to enrich yourself with the word of God and use right choice of words for right occasion as weapon, as sword, to fight against your temptations as Jesus Christ did when the Satan tested him. (Mat 4:1-11) You should be filled with wisdom of God, (1 Cor 2:7-12), and use God's words as powerful weapons in order to fight well against devil. (1 Tim 1:18) If you do it with determination and faith the devil will run away from you. (James 4:7) God said; Put my word to test. (1 Thes 5:21) You will see my power working in you. (1 Thes 2:13) You will be experience freedom from temptations and sin. **Word of God is the only offensive weapon we have against the Satan. Hence we should be wise to use it powerfully and effectively to protect our freedom from sin & win victory.**

Armour 7- Prayer: We should pray at all times, asking for God's help. Importantly we should pray at time chosen by God as written in Scriptures. **The scriptures says;**

>> Pray early in the early morning before sunrise between 3 and 6 AM. (Wis 6:12-21)

>> It is the time when the Spirit of Jesus is awesome. He showers Spirit of Wisdom on a person who prays at this time and guides him through his words. (Is 30:20 & Ps 119:105)

>> In all your problems /troubles/ tribulations Jesus will counsel you as St John said; "As for you Christ has poured his Spirit on you. As long as his Spirit remains in you, you do not need any one to teach you. For, his Spirit teaches you everything, and what he teaches you is true and not false. Obey the Spirit's teachings, then, and remain in Christ."(1 Jh 2:27)

>> In your prayer, if Christ counsels you to do certain thing do not hesitate to do it. For God says; "Do not restrain Holy Spirit; do not despise the inspired messages. Put all things to test; keep what is good and avoid all evil."(1 Thess 5:19-22)

>> Pray in the afternoon at 3 O'clock which is the hour of mercy. It is, the time when Jesus Christ died. (Acts 3:1)

>> When you pray in the afternoon you will experience Christ's mercy for his mercy is as great as his majesty. (Sir 2:18).

>> Christ's mercy will come to you like a river that never goes dry. (2 Esdras 2:32)

>> Christ will be there with you in every thought and bless all your that you do. (Ps 132:16).

>> Christ- the Spirit of Wisdom will give you good advice and encourage you in times of trouble and grief. (Wis 8:9)

>> Christ will make you successful in everything. (Prov16:3) Because; "you will walk on snakes and scorpions and overcome the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you". (Luk 10:19)

>> Pray at all times as the Spirit leads. Be thankful in all circumstances, for this is the will of God for you in Christ Jesus.(1 Thess 5:17-18) If you remain with Christ and live with his words, whatever you ask in prayer will be given.(Jh 15:7)A prayer raised with faith will be heard by God in heaven (James 5:16)

ARE YOU UNITED WITH CHRIST THROUGH HIS WORDS?

In spiritual life you must to be clever & cautious to protect your freedom from temptations & sin. It will be easy, if you are united with Christ always through his words and take his help by surrendering your will to his will. Jesus said; "whoever does not remain united with me is thrown out like a branch and it dries up; such branches are gathered and thrown in to fire, where they are burnt". "You can do nothing on your own". But if you are united with me everything is possible for you. (Jh 15:4-6) **St Paul said;** I can do all things with Christ who strengthens me. (Phil 4:13) Without Christ you will be destroyed, for, the Satan waiting for opportunities to steal your blessings, kill your living soul and destroy your eternal life. (Jh 10:10)

The Holy Spirit prompts you to be wise & enrich yourself with God's Words and use right Word for the right occasion to destroy temptations so that you can easily counter the attack and overcome your struggle. **Yes, if you resist the Satan with the Word of God he will run away from you;** as St James said; "resist the devil he will run away from you."(James 4:7)

St Paul said; "The weapons we use are not the world's weapons, but God's powerful weapons, (armour of God) which we use to destroy strongholds. We destroy every false arguments; we pull down every proud obstacles (temptations) that are raised against us; we take every thought captive and make it to obey Christ. (2 Cor 10:4-5)

Wise way to overcome temptations is: Always remain united with Jesus through his words. Take protection of Mother Mary by meditating rosary for 'She' is the Guardian for Church. She keeps the Satan under her feet and will shield you from his burning arrows.

DO YOU WANT TO GIVE UP YOUR FIGHT AGAINST SIN?

You should be always on guard, so that you are not deceived by temptations & evil's tricks and lose your blessings. St John said; "He that who is in me (Christ) is greater than the one (Satan) who is in this world. (1 Jh 4:4) "So, when you stand in the name of Jesus, the name above all names, (Phil 2:9 & Acts 4:12) the name to which power is given by God the Father, (Jh 17:11-12) you will always find victory against Satan. This is the reason why Jesus said; "Watch out and pray so that you will not fall in temptations". (Mat 26:41) Further he said; "be on guard and do not let anyone deceive you." Jesus repeats this word "be on guard" four times in the Gospel of St Mark in verses: Mark 13: 5, 9, 23, & 35. Yes, you should be on guard because, the devil is roaming around like a lion looking to devour anyone who is weak in faith and weak in Word of God. (1Pet 5:8)

Do not fear and run from temptations. You must fight temptations with God's words as St Paul said; "Use his words as weapons, in order to fight well." (1 Tim 1:18) Yes, you must fight the Satan with Word of God as Jesus did to drive to Satan away. (Mat 4:1-10) If you fight without losing faith you will win victory for God said; "If your faith endures in Word of God you will also endure in your spiritual life and gain eternal life." (Is 7:9)

SO NEVER GIVE UP YOUR FIGHT AGAINST SIN!

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.

QUESTION NO-14

ARE YOU READY TO FIGHT THE HOLY WAR?

DID GOD CALL YOU TO FIGHT THIS HOLY WAR?

What is Holy War? The Scriptures says; "We are not fighting against human beings, but against the wicked spiritual forces of the heavenly world; the rulers, authorities and cosmic powers of the Dark Age. (Eph 6:12) These are wicked spirits of the universe who enslave human beings, (Gal 4:3) by binding them with invisible chains, (Wis 17:17) and, cause them to lose freedom which God gave them. (Gal 5:1) These wicked spirits are the fallen angels, fighting against human beings who are created in image of God, (Gen 1:27) to destroy the active soul which God breathed into them. (Wis 15:11) But God is fighting against these wicked spirits through us, for, this battle belongs to God. (1 Chr 20:15) God has chosen you to be his soldier to fight this battle using his weapons as Prophet Isaiah said; "We are proud and confident soldiers, who are called to fight this holy war against evil spirits and punish them." (Is 13:3) God trains you for this battle so that he can use you as the strongest bow." (Ps 18:34) Yes, God trains you for battle & prepares you for war." (Ps 144:1)

You are called to fight this Holy War: To fight this war you do not need weapons of this world. You should use God's powerful weapons, to destroy strongholds. You destroy every false arguments; you pull down every proud obstacles that are raised against you (temptations), you take every thought captive and make it to obey Christ. (2 Cor 10:4-5) The weapons you should to use are: Truth as waist belt, Righteousness as breast plate, Readiness to announce Good News as shoes, Faith as shield, Salvation as helmet, Word of God as sword and Prayer as stronghold in spiritual life. (Eph 6:14-18) Dear believer, are you ready to fight the powers of darkness which are losing its power?" (1Cor 2:6) God said; "Use my Word as powerful weapon in order to fight well." (1 Tim 1:18)

GOD ECOURAGES HIS SERVANTS TO FIGHT THIS HOLY WAR:

He said to Joshua: Be sure that you read my Law day and night, and in your daily worship. Obey everything written in it. "Remember that I have command you to be determined and confident. Do not be afraid and discouraged, for I the Lord your God am with you wherever you go. (Josh 1:8-9)

He said to Jeremiah; "Listen Jeremiah! Everyone in this land- the King of Judah, the official, the priests and the people will be against you. But today I am giving you the strength to resist them. You will be like a fortified city, an iron pillar and a bronze wall. They will not defeat you, for I will be with you to protect you. I the Lord have spoken" (Jer 1:11-19)

Again he said to Jeremiah; "I will make you like a solid wall of bronze as far as they (evil spirits) are concerned. They will fight against you, but they will not defeat you. I will be with you to protect you and keep you safe. I will rescue you from the power of wicked and violent. I the Lord have spoken" (Jer 15:20-21)

He said to Sirach; "Be determined and confident in your ways and walk in straight your path and be righteous. (Sir 2:2-6) If you are righteous, God gives a promise to fight for you, because the battle belongs to the Lord. (Ex 14:14)

In the book Wisdom, God gave great promise to protect the righteous. He said; "But, the righteous will live on forever. The Lord will reward them. The Most High will protect them .He will give them royal splendour and magnificent crown. He will shield them with his powerful arm. He will go out into the battle determined to defeat the enemies and use creation itself as his weapons. Righteousness will be his armour, genuine justice will be his helmet, and holiness will be his invincible shield. He will sharpen his stern anger in to a sword and the forces of nature will join him in his battle against those who are foolish enough to oppose his people. (Wis 5:15-20)

Our Lord will fight to protect us, if we turn away from sin and live righteous life. God is faithful to his promises and he is merciful in all his acts. (Ps 147:13)

Finally God said; "My word is a double edged sword, which will cut all the way in between where your soul and the evil spirit which has enslaved them meet, and give freedom from the invisible chains that are binding you. (Heb 4:12) You are called to use God's Words against the Satan, (Eph 6:17) in the same manner how Jesus Christ used Word of God against the Satan when he tempted Christ in the desert. (Mat 4: 1-10)

When Jesus Christ gave Word of God to the Satan, he left Christ alone! This is what St James said; "Resist the Devil, (with Word of God) he will run away from you". (James 4:7)

WILL GOD KEEP US SAFE IN THIS HOLY WAR?

The helper Holy Spirit will help us; Dear Believer, the most difficult task in the present world is to keep yourself safe from sin, because sin has increased in multitude and flashed all around you. Since you are weak for sin, (Mat 26:41) it is getting increasingly difficult to preserve your holiness. But Christ's Love for you is so great that he has not left you alone in this world. Jesus said; "I will not leave you like orphans".(Jh 14:18) He offers his help through a helper the 'Holy Spirit'. (Jn 14:26)

You must know God's promises for help & be alive spiritually to avail this help. You should be alive to situations and be alert to protect yourself from the tricks that Satan plays to deceive you. Jesus said; "Be as gentle as a dove and as clever as a snake" (Mat 10:16) He warns you four times by saying; "Be on guard against the enemy who will deceive you any time in a most unexpected manner." (Mk13:5, 9, 23 & 35)

You should remind God of his promises to protect you: Your help comes through God's promises. All that you need to do is; you should be aware of God's promises and remind the Lord of his promises day and night. You should never let the Lord to forget his promises until he restores them. (Is 62:6-7).

Also you should claim those promises for yourself through Jesus Christ who is the fulfilment of all God's promises. For Jesus is the 'Yes' for God's promises. (2 Cor 1:20) You should remind the Lord every day and night about his faithfulness to his promises. (2 Tim 2:13) Because, the Lord is faithful to all his promises and is merciful in all his acts. (Ps 145:13)

God will surely protect you in this war because he has promised his children that; "The protector of Israel never doses or sleeps. The Lord will guard you; he will be your side to protect you. The sun will not hurt you in the day nor moon by night. The Lord will protect you from all danger; he will keep you safe. He will protect you as you come and go now and forever."(Ps 121:4)

WILL FASTING PROTECT US IN THIS HOLY WAR?

Dear believer in Christ, you should be aware that we are not fighting against human beings. This holy war is against the wicked spiritual forces of the heavenly world, the rulers, authorities and cosmic

powers of the Dark Age. (Eph 6:12) We cannot fight these wicked spiritual powers with our human power. We can fight them only with power from above. So we need God's favour in this encounter.

You can win Lord's favour only by fasting and praying. Because, Jesus said; "Human power is of no use at all." To fight the powers of darkness you need God's life giving Spirit. (Jh 6:63) To evoke the Spirit from above and to receive power, you need fasting and prayer. Jesus said; "You can win over such kind of evil spirits only through fasting and prayer". (Mat 17:21)

>> Fasting may be regular 'one day fasting' in a week, on Fridays. Only with water if health permits. Or, you may have light beverages like soup/ tea/ coffee. If your health does not permit to fast for full day, you may have light supper. **Such regular fasting will bring you closer to God.** And God will give you deliverance from sinful habits and grace to overcome your sinful-self. You will receive power to avoid temptations and resist Devil.

>> Fasting may be three days; only with water as guided by the Lord's Spirit. Esther and Jews observed three days fasting only with water to win over the evil man Haman, his sons and his soldiers, who were planning to destroy the Jews. (4:1-17) (Only people who are healthy may observe three days fasting for special purposes such as deliverance from witchcraft or from any satanic bondage)

>> Fasting may be seven days; only with vegetarian soup thrice a day. The day may be ended with light veg food at supper if health does not permit. (2 Esdras 5; 20-23, & 9: 23-37) Such fasting can be observed to receive gifts of Spirit. (1 Cro 12:7-11)

>> Fasting may be twenty one days; with strict light vegetarian food, avoiding fat. Daniel observed fasting for twenty one days to resist the powers of darkness. (Dan 10:1-12).

>> Fasting may be forty days; during the season of lent with light beverages during day and light vegetarian meal at supper. Such fasting may be observed for repentance of people of the world and for cleansing of your soul. Such fasting will bring a turning point in our spiritual life. Jesus observed forty days fasting before he commenced his ministry on earth. (Mat 4:1-3)

When you fast, you deny the body for food. With food, flesh becomes strong. But in fasting your spirit becomes even stronger.

When you fast God sees your heart and sends his Spirit upon you who will make you as an Iron pillar and Bronze wall against the powers of darkness as God spoke to Jeremiah. (Jer 1:18-19) Yes, the Lord will make you as firm as a rock and as hard as a diamond against the powers of Satan. (Ezkl 3:8-9).

The Lord will break all strongholds of evil powers as he has promised that; "Even though the Assyrians (evil bondages) are strong and numerous, they will be destroyed and disappear. My people, I made you suffer, but I will not do it again. I will now end the power of Assyrians (evils spirits) over you and break the chains that are binding you." (Nahum 1:12-13) By fasting and prayer you will receive power from God to fight this holy war.

"People fasted for protection and won favour of the Lord to fight the evil's power"

When disciples could not deliver a man possessed by evil spirits, Jesus said to them; "such kind of evil spirits can be delivered only through fasting and prayer" (Mat 17:14-21)

The Jews won the favour of the Lord by fasting for three days and three nights. God changed everything in their favour to fight against evil man Haman and his soldiers who were determined to destroy the Jews. Finally, Jews won the war against their enemies. (Esther: Chapters 4 to 9)

Judith killed the evil man General Holofernes and won his army with the help of the Lord. She gained Lord's favour through fasting & prayer. (Judith Chap 4-15)

People won Lord's favour by observing fasting, when they heard Lord's message through Prophet Baruch, about destruction that was to come upon them. On seeing how people acted the Lord changed his mind on destruction he was about to send on them. Thus, they won the favour of the Lord. (Jer 36:4-10)

Prophet Ezra gained favour of the Lord for 'protection' against evil forces by leading people in fasting before he undertook the dangerous journey from Ahava Canal to Jerusalem. (Ezra 8:15-36).

Jesus Christ gained favour of his Heavenly Father by fasting for forty days & nights before he began his Ministry. Thus, Jesus has set an example and thought us that this world is filled with evil spirits.

They will destroy all our good deeds concerning Spiritual activities and will do everything to destroy our spiritual life and physical body. Hence, we need to fast and pray to gain favour of God for protection in this Holy War.

HOW TO USE GOD'S WORDS AS WEAPONS IN ORDER TO FIGHT WELL IN THIS HOLY WAR.

God said; "Use my words as powerful sword in order to fight well."(1 Tim 1:18) Yes, the Scriptures teaches you how to use promises of the Lord to fight against evil spirits. In this battle against evil spirits and sin, you must be well enriched with the right choice of Word of God to for every occasion, (Pro 15:23) in order to evoke the richness and power in the word to fight against situations, people, worldly attractions, attachments, your sinful desires/weaknesses and every other satanic traps & tricks that are luring you to commit sin repeatedly.

Here I would like to give some of the Words / Promises that will give protection provided you sincerely accept them in faith and remind the Lord of his promises day & night and also claim the Lord's faithfulness for those promises.

Do not worry about anything (do not worry about your sinfulness, or bandage, or sickness) but in all your prayer ask God for what you need. (Ask for complete deliverance from your will-full sins, evil habits & bondages) Always ask him with thankful heart. (Phil 4: 6)

"God's peace which is for beyond human understanding will keep your hearts and minds safe (from sin) in union with Christ". (Which means you will feel the power of Christ's protection over you which will give you the grace to avoid sin) (Phil 4: 7)

"Fill your minds with those things that are good and that deserves praise; things that are noble, right, pure, lovely and honourable. Put into practice what you have learnt and received from God, both in words and in actions. And God who gives peace will be with you" (in everything that you do) (Phil 4:8-9)

God's promises will deliver you from evil spirits for God said; "Look up heaven; look at the earth! The heavens will disappear like a smoke; the earth will wear out like old clothing. And all the people will die like flies. But the deliverance I bring will last for ever; my victory will be final". (Is 51:6)

"Listen to me you that know what is right, who have my teachings fixed in your hearts. Do not be worried when people taunt you and insult you; they will vanish like moth-eaten clothing! But the deliverance I bring will last for ever; my victory will endure for all time". (Is 51:7-8)

Here the command given to us is very clear. That is; "We are supposed to put everything into practice what we have learnt from Scriptures".

But, the questions that raises at this juncture are:

1) *Are you just a name sake Christian who go to Church on Sundays as a religious ritual, but fail to abide in Christ? (Phil 3:3)*

2) *Do you apply/use the living words of God in your practical life when situations arise? (James 1:22-25)*

3) *Are you reading Bible just because you were told to read? Or, do you accept that God has spoken his words to cleanse you, to help you to live holy life and bless you. (Jh 1:10-12, & 15:3)*

4) *When you read Bible do you realise that your Heavenly Father is speaking to you through the words in Bible? (Jh 14:10-12)*

5) *Do you accept Bible as a book of life and accept God's words in faith to live a life pleasing God? (Prov 4:19-20)*

6) *Do you believe that God's words are His Spirit and it brings God's life-giving Spirit into your body and soul? (Jh 6:63)*

7) *Do you practice your faith? i.e., do you put into practice what you have learnt from the Bible? Because faith without action is dead. (James 2:16-17)*

Dear believer, you are called to practice faith. Which means; when a situation arises you are supposed to use the right choice of Word of God, meditate on it and apply it to the situation with faith and wait upon the Lord to act and Show his power in the Word. This is called putting his words in to practice. If you put his words to test with faith, (1 Thes 5:21) you will be blessed in what you do. (1 Thess 2:13)

God gives assurance that he will be with you to show his power. If you use right choice of God's Words at the right occasion

to fight the powers of darkness (Prov 15:23) you will experience God's power working in you. The powers of darkness will fight against you to lure you to commit sin. But they will not succeed in making you to fall, because God will be with you to fight for you and give victory as God spoke to Jeremiah and said;

"I will make you a solid wall of bronze as far as they (evil spirits) are concerned. They will fight against you. But they will not defeat you. I will be with you to keep you safe. I will rescue you from power of the wicked and violent men. I the Lord have spoken. (Jer 15:20-21)

This is how you can overcome the power of evil spirits and walk on them as promised by Jesus. He said; "I have given you authority to walk on snakes and scorpions and overcome the power of the enemy; nothing can harm you."(Luk 10:19)

Some promises of the Lord are chosen for the believers to meditate (Sir 6:37), to claim them every day (Is 62:6-7) through Jesus Christ (2 Cor 1:20) and also to claim Lord's faithfulness for his promises. (2 Tim 2:13)

GOD PROMISES TO PROTECT US FROM THE POWER OF SIN.

St John said; "We know that no child of God keeps on sinning, for the Son of God keeps him safe and the evil one cannot harm him". (1 Jh 5:18)

St Paul said; *"We have a High Priest* who was tested every way that we are, but did not sin. (Heb 4:15). And now, He (Christ) can help those who are tempted because he himself was tempted and suffered. (Heb 2:18) (Are you sincerely looking for Christ's help to avoid sin when you undergo temptations? If you do so, you will succeed in winning over your sinful-self and win this holy war)

St Paul said; "The Lord is faithful and he will strengthen you in every weakness you & keep you free from the evil one. "(2 Thess 3: 3)

God said; "My grace" is all you need for my power is greatest when you are weak ". (2 Cor 12:9) If you ask God for help when you are losing yourself for temptations, his power will be very strong in you. You will experience his grace strengthening your inner-self which will give you power to resist all satanic powers that are luring you to commit sin. Especially you will be able to overcome your will-full sins.

God said; "I will make you as firm as rock and as hard as diamond as for as they are concerned" (evil spirits are concerned) (Ezkl 3:8-9) Here the Lord gives you assurance for sure foundation in spiritual life. When you live with his words and, meditate on them, none of the evil forces can influence you. This was also assured by Christ. He said; "A man who has built a house on Rock need not fear for flood or storm. The House will stand firm against all destructive forces". (Mat 7:24-25) Yes, if your life is built on Word of God, gates of hell will have no power over you."

God said; "You will succeed (against Satan) not by military might or by your own strength, but by My Spirit says the Lord. The obstacles as great as mountain will disappear before you". (Zach 4: 6-7) Because, the battle belongs to the Lord. (2 Chr 20:15 & Wis 5:17) So, allow the Lord to work in you by surrendering your will to his will by obeying his word.

God said; "Do not be afraid I will save you; I have called you by name, you are mine. When you pass through deep waters, I will be with you. Your troubles will not overwhelm you. When you pass through fire you will not be burnt. The hard trials that came will not hurt you. For I am the Lord your God, the holy God of Israel who saves you. I will give up Egypt to set you free. I will give up the whole nation to save your life. Because you are precious to me and because I love you and give honour. Do not be afraid, because I am with you. (Is 43: 1-5)

God said: "There is nothing that can keep me, the Lord almighty from protecting Mount Zion (His Children) Just as a bird hovers over its nest to protect its young one, so I the Lord almighty will protect Jerusalem and defend it."(Is 31: 4-5)

"Jesus said: If you remain in me and my words remain in you, then you will ask anything you wish & you shall have it". (John 15:7)

So Dear believer, fill yourself with the words of Jesus. Retain his words in your mind and meditate on them to experience his presence in you. And then;

>> Ask Jesus for his protection against evil spirits. (Is 51:16)

>> Ask Jesus to fill you with his grace so that you will receive courage and conviction to give up your wilful sins. (2 Cor 12:9)

>> Ask Jesus to strengthen your inner-self so that you can reject deep desires for sin (the sins that pour out from your heart- Mat

15:19-20) and overcome all weaknesses (sinful habits & relations - Gal 5:19-21) which makes you fall in sin repeatedly.

>> *Ask Jesus for a complete inward transformation of your mind (Rom 12:1-2) so that you may not be lured by sinful attractions of the world and reject sin in all its forms. (Col 2:13-15) This is called as circumcision of heart. (Col 2:11-12)*

>> *If you receive this special gift - transformation of your mind, no force on this world can compel you to commit sin in any circumstance. (Jer 15:19-21)*

>> *Jesus said; "I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door I will come into his house and eat with him and he will eat with me. (Rev 3:20) Yes, Jesus want to enter in your life, live with you and lead you. (1 Jh 2:27)*

>> "Allow Jesus to live in your hearts through his words and take control in every area of your life. Surrender your life to him in humble obedience". He will fight for you and give victory because the battle belongs to him. (Ex 14:14 & Wis 5:17)

>> For his words says; "The Lord goes out to fight like a warrior; he is ready and eager for battle. He gives a war cry and a battle shout; he shows his power against his enemies. (Is 42:13)

YOU WILL NEVER LOSE IN THIS HOLY WAR!

Dear believer, live life day-by-day, in total surrender, in humble obedience to God's words. If you do so, then,

>> *You will experience his words guiding you, (Is 30:20-22)*

>> *His words counselling you, (Is 9:6 & 1 Jh 2:27)*

>> *His awesome presence leading you in light, (Is 42:16)*

>> *His powerful arm protecting you, (Is 51:16)*

>> *His promises protecting you day and night, (Ps 121:4-8)*

>> *His mercy filling you with grace, (2 Cor 12:9)*

>> *His grace strengthening you in weaknesses, (Is 40:29-30)*

>> *His love filling you with the fruits of the Spirit, (Gal 5:22)*

>> *His anointment giving you gifts of the Spirit, (1Cor 12:7-11)*

>> *His splendour will pass before you and in his presence he will you victory. (Ex 34:14 & 19)*

>> Then you will realise that his power is working in you and making you as firm as rock and as hard as a diamond against the powers of darkness. (Ezkl 3:8-9).

His Spirit will make you as a wall of bronze to resist against all the powers of darkness. The evil spirits will try to lure you, but they cannot win over you because Jesus will be with you to protect you. (Jer 15:19-21) You will realise that you have gained power over your weaknesses, which were not allowing you to observe holiness. If you are sincere in doing what is told here in this chapter you will live "New life in Christ" and experience "Fullness of Christ" in you. (Col Chapters 2 & 3)

By the Power in the Name "JESUS" you will be kept safe from all the satanic attacks. (Jh 17: 11-12). You will never be lost in the battle against wicked spiritual forces of the dark age, if only you believe and accept "Jesus Christ" as your Shepherd, for; Jesus is your Shepherd (Ezkl 34:16) and keeper of your soul. (1 Pet 2:25)

If you honour Jesus by worshiping him early in the morning between 3 and 6 AM, obey his teachings words (Luk 11:28) consult him in everything you do, (1 Chr 14:8-17) do not despise the Holy Spirit and obey the inspired messages, (1 Thess 5:19-20) then, Jesus who is the Supreme Spiritual Ruler and Authority (Col 2:10) will never allow you to be defeated in this Holy War.

Because, God has promised that;

"No weapon will be able to hurt you. You will have an answer for all who accuse you. I will defend my servants and give them victory." (Is 54:17)

Yes believers, you will win victory in this Holy War because the battle belongs to the Lord. (1 Sam 17:47, 2 Sam 7:8-9 & Zech 4:6-7)

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.

QUESTION NO-15

ARE WE GIVEN POWER TO RULE OVER SIN?

Our God has spoken in so many words in bible that he is the one who protects believers who come to him for protection. He said;
 >> *"Is anyone among you in trouble? He must pray to me! (Jas 5:13)*
 >> *"You are my people; I have given my teaching to you and protect you with my hand" (Is 51:16).*

>> *"I will defend the city (my children) and protect it for the sake of my own honour and because of the promise that I made to my servant David" (Is 37:35)*

>> Through King David God said; **"The protector of Israel never doses or sleeps;** *The Lord will guard you; he is by your side to protect you. The sun will not hurt you by day nor the moon by night. The Lord will protect you from all dangers; he will keep you safe. He will protect you as you come and go; now and forever. (Ps 121:4-8)*

THE PROMISE FOR PROTECTION WORKS IN TWO WAYS.

It acts as a double edged sword (Heb 4:12) i.e., the promises of God gives protection to believers in two ways as explained below:

One: "Believers receive protection by the power of God's Spirit," through various promises of God as explained in previous chapter.

Two: *God teaches us various ways on how to use his anointment to protect ourselves against the Satan through various Sacraments.*

GOD'S PROTECTION THROUGH THE SACRAMENTS

BAPTISM: **God said; baptism is the "Mark of God's ownership put upon his children"**. (Eph 4:30) In baptism God sends his Holy Spirit on the person who is baptised. In this Sacrament the person who receives baptism is cleansed/set free from the 'Original sin' which comes upon every new born child. The original sin took its birth in disobedience of the first parents Adam & Eve. This sin is passed on to all their descendants and thus every child born of a woman carries the curse/lesion of original sin. Thus the original sin is sowed in flesh of whole mankind. (Rom 5:12) But God did not allow the whole human race to carry the burden/curse of the Original sin. Hence God instituted a Sacrament called Baptism through which the original sin is cleansed by his sanctifying grace.

Through baptism, the person who is baptised is cleansed of the original sin and becomes as pure and holy. God the Father in heaven accepts the baptised child as his own son. (Is 31:20) On becoming God's son (Rom 8:29-30 & Heb 12:5-6) the person who was baptised becomes one in Christ and becomes a descendant of Abraham to receive what God has promised (Gal 3: 27-29) To show that we are his sons, God sent Spirit of Jesus in to our hearts, the Spirit which cries out, "Father, my Father". So then, we are no longer a slaves but a sons. And since we are his sons, God will give us all that he has for his sons. He said; "My son you are always with me. All that I have is yours". (Luk 15:31) In Baptism we become a member of the Church and rightfully inherit all the blessings that are promised by God which includes God's protection from evil spirits.

CONFESSIOIN: The Sacrament of Confession is a great gift given by Jesus to save us from destruction. After resurrection Jesus appeared to his disciples and said; "Peace be to you. As Father sent me, so I send you". Then he breathed on them and said; "Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive people's sins they are forgiven; if you do not forgive them, they are not forgiven". (Jh 20:21-23)

In this Sacrament, the sins committed by a baptised person who is a member of Roman Catholic Church is absolved by Christ himself through a Priest, there-by he becomes a new being. (Eph 4:23-24) The sinner is freed from the burden of his sins. In this Sacrament Jesus breaks all the invisible chains of Satan (Wis 17:17) by which the sinner is bound. (Nah 1:12-13) The sinner is set free by the "Covenant that was sealed by the blood of sacrifices" from sadness, depression, spiritual sufferings, physical ailments and all negativities caused by sin. (Zech 9:11 & Mat 26:27-28)

Sacrament of Confession is spiritual renewal where God the Creator is constantly renewing his own image in man in order to bring a sinner to a full knowledge of Christ himself."(Col 3:10) The sinner is given a new lease of life. (Rom 6:23) The anointment received in this Sacrament gives him grace to reject sin & power to protect himself from evil spirits provided he does not willingly commit sin again.

HOLY COMMUNION: Sacrament of Communion' was instituted by Jesus on the "Day of Lord's supper.' In this Sacrament a member of Roman Catholic Church consumes the body and blood of Jesus when he takes part in the celebration of Holy Mass to become one with him as commanded by Jesus during the Supper. (Luk 22:14-20) In the supper Jesus took a piece of bread, gave a prayer of thanks,

broke it and gave it to his disciples. He said; take it and eat of it, this is my body". Then he took a cup, gave thanks to God and gave it to them. He said; "Drink it all of you. This is my blood poured out for many, for forgiveness of sins."(Mat 26:27-28) To commemorate the Lord's Supper after his death, Jesus commanded his disciples; "Do this in memory of me whenever you gather in my name". (Luk 22:19)

Further Jesus said; "if you do not eat my body and drink my blood you will not have life in yourselves. (Jh 6:53) He said this because; by eating his flesh and drinking his blood we become part of Christ's body and receive the anointment and power of Jesus which preserves our soul and body from the Satan who is a cunning beast, looking for opportunity to destroy our body and soul.(2 Thes 3:3)

CONFIRMATION: The Sacrament of Confirmation is given to a person who is a member in R C Church after reaching matured age. He /She is conferred authority by the Elders / Priests of the Church to go to ends of the earth and proclaim the Kingdom of God. This Sacrament is administered in honour of "Pentecost". (Acts 2:1- 4) On the 'Day of Confirmation,' a member who receives the Sacrament is specially anointed by elders of the Church. This anointment remains with him throughout his life to proclaim the Good News.

God said; "until I come, give your time & effort to the public reading of Scripture and preaching & teaching. Do not neglect the spiritual gifts that is in you which was given to you when prophets spoke and elders laid hands their on you. Practice these things & devote yourself to them, in order that your progress is seen by all. Watch yourself and your teaching. Keep on doing these things, because if you do, you will save both, yourself and those who hear you. (1 Tim 4:13-16) The anointment received in this Sacrament preserves the believer & people who hear Word of God through him from the Satan.

MARRIAGE: God said; 'It is not good for man to remain alone. Hence, he created woman and united man and women as one body & one flesh. He said 'the two will become one'. (Gen 2:18-24, & Mat 19: 4-5) God said to Adam & Eve rise children and fill the earth with your descendants (Gen1:27-28) God did not allow man /woman to remain alone. He instituted the Sacrament - 'Marriage', so that mankind will not be deceived by the Satan to indulge in sexual sins but glorify God in their marital relation. But if man / woman indulge in sexual sin, through their sins the Satan cause hurt in their body (temple of Holy Spirit) and in the soul which God breathed in them.

(Sir 19:4 & 1 Cor 6:18) If they die in this sin, their soul will be condemned to hell and lose they will lose the promised eternal life.

To protect mankind from their own destruction through sexual sins, God blessed them through this Sacrament-Marriage. The union between man & woman is celebrated in the Church as Marriage, where God unites them as per his plan for eternity. (Is 34:16) He anoints them to raise children. This anointment remains with man & women throughout their life and preserves them from committing sexual sin. Thus they are protected from the destructive power of sin. Yes, Man & Women receive God's protection in marriage.

Ministerial priesthood/Religious Brothers and Sisters: God gave two options to mankind for choosing their settled life. It is between "Marriage" and "Consecrated Ministerial Priesthood/ Brothers / Sisters or Nuns. God's plan in 'Marriage' was explained in previous para; "Sacrament of Marriage". If people choose Ministerial life, they are trained for many years, counselled on the blessings/difficulties in Ministerial life for their final decision. Finally, with full consent for celibacy, they are "Consecrated as Ministers" of Church to serve the Lord all their life as Priests/ Religious Brothers (or) Nuns. The Lord himself becomes the Bride / Groom for them. (Is 62:4-5)

The anointment they receive at the time of Consecration is very powerful. In consecration they are given special grace by God to maintain celibacy and to do the work in the field of Salvation against the Evil one. This powerful anointment remains with them all through their life to preserve them in Wisdom of God, to strengthen them in temptations and to protect them from power of sin.

ANOINTMENT OF THE SICK: The Sacrament "Anointment of Sick" is given to a person who is dangerously ill for healing, by forgiving his sins. (Jas 5:14-16) His body is preserved by this Sacrament from sickness caused by his sins. Yes, the sins we commit hurts our body & destroys our soul. (Sir 19:4 & 1Cor 6:18) Our sins destroy our physical body through various sickness as written in Sirach 38:9-10, Proverb Chapters 5,6,&7 and James 5:2-3. **In this Sacrament, the sick person's sins are forgiven** and his soul is washed by the Blood of Christ which brings healing. (Is 1:18) Thus the anointment in this Sacrament preserves his body from the power of sin. However as per God plan, if the Most High has pronounced the final decree that a person shall die, he dies in his sick bed. And his soul departs from body and returns to God as we read in 2 Esdras 7:78. Since he has received the Sacrament of 'Anointment of the Sick', his soul is

purified. Hence his soul will be saved/protected from the clutches of Satan. He will surely receive eternal life promised by Jesus Christ. (Jh 11:25) Thus his soul is preserved from the Satan. He will not suffer condemnation.

DID JESUS GIVE US AUTHORITY TO RULE OVER SIN?

Christians always have fear about evil spirits. Hence they fear in every aspects of life. In daily walk of life, even those who do not believe in Christ, do things daringly which they think is correct, with conviction in heart and without fear in mind. But believers in Christ who read Bible everyday do not believe in what they read. They fear to do what non-believers do without fear. They do not put their faith in to action to glorify God. They fear and hesitate to put their faith in to action or they do not practice what they read in bible. Thus they glorify the Satan with fear in mind and negative words in mouth.

Such fear has been instilled in mind by parents /grandparents / friends / relatives, because, they themselves do no honour God in practicing their faith. They honour the Satan by using the word "fear" in daily walk of life. They fear to practice what they read in Scriptures and lose blessings that God has reserved for them in his plan. God says, fear does not come from him, but from Satan. For God said; "There is no fear in love. Perfect love drives out all fear. (1 Jh 4:18)

God said: "You are my dearest son, the one I love the best". (Is 31:20) You should not fear Evil but fear only me. (Sir 34:13-15) God asks man; "Why should you live in constant fear of fury of those who oppress you, or those who are ready to destroy you? Their fury can no longer touch you". (Is 51:13) "I am the one who strengthens you. Why should you fear you mortal man who is enduring no more than grass? Have you forgotten the Lord who made you, who stretched the heavens & laid the foundations of earth"?(Is 51:12-13)

The Satan holds the whole world in grip of fear. This fear does not allow us to live in freedom and to use the spiritual power that God given us. We live in fear when we do not trust God's Words. King Solomon said; **"Fear is nothing but failure to use the help that reason gives. When you lack confidence to rely on reason, you give into fears caused by ignorance. (Wid 17:12)** That is why God said; "My people are dying due to ignorance."(Hos 4:6) Due to ignorance people fear to practice spiritual powers in faith. **Jesus warns his believers not to fear the Satan.** There are numerous instances where God warns

believers not to fear. (Is 41:10-15) But our forefathers lived in fear because, they were ignorant about the status what God gave them.

God has spoken about the status of believers as below:

>> "Israel, I the Lord who created you say; "Do not fear-I will save you. I have called you by name, you are mine. When you pass through water I will be with you. Your troubles of the world will not overwhelm you. When you pass through fire you will not be burnt. I will give up whole nations to save you, because you are precious in my eyes. Do not fear. (Is 43:1-5)

>> Israel, you will be a beautiful crown for the Lord.(Is 62:3)

>> Israel you are my dearest son, the child I love the best. When I mention your name I think of you with love. My heart goes to you. I will be merciful to you" (Jer 31:20).

This is the status that every believer enjoys in the eyes of God.

Most of the believers are ignorant about what God has spoken about them. God said; "My people are dying due to ignorance"(Hos 4:6)

They were ignorant on the authority & power that God has given to believers, (Is 59:21) which can be used against evil to bind him and to keep him under their feet. Because of fear, caused by ignorance, our forefathers lived in constant fear of evil and have groomed us in this manner. **They feared to enter in to real spiritual life and to use those powers which Jesus to give to believers.**

But Christ has given us authority over the Satan. He said:

>>> *"I have given you authority to walk on snakes (our sinful desires and weaknesses for sin) and scorpions (sinful attractions of the world) and to overcome the power of the enemy (Satan, who is luring us in sin) and nothing can hurt you."*(Luk 10:19)

>>> *"Believers are given power to perform miracles; they will drive out demons in my name; they will speak in strange tongues; if they pick up snakes or drink poison, they will not be harmed; they place hands on sick people who will get well"*.(Mk 16:17-18)

>>> *"We can bind evil spirits by the power given by Jesus, who said; "whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven and whatever you set free on earth will be set free in heaven."*(Mat 18:18).

This is how Jesus speaks about the authority and power that he has given to believers against the enemy. This is the real power in spiritual life. Hence you can rule over your enemy, the Satan.

DID GOD PROMISE TO LEAD US IN SPIRITUAL LIFE?

Further God gave a promise and said; "I will lead my blind people through the roads that they have never travelled. I will turn their

darkness into light and make the rough country road smooth before them. These are my promises that I will keep them without fail.”(Is 42:16). *In this promise God said that; **“we are blind”**. Further he said; **“I will lead my blind people through the roads that they never travelled”**. Now let us understand the spiritual truth in this promise.*

Here God says that; ‘We are blind’. *Yes, we are blind for God’s promises and for spiritual powers that God has given us, because we do not know Scriptures. Even if we know, we do not believe in Scriptures. That’s why God said; “My people are dying for lack of knowledge”. (Hos 4:6) When the word of God was given to us, it did not do anything good because, we have not receive the word with faith. (Heb 4:2) Yes believers, we lack knowledge on what God has spoken about us. Hence, the Satan uses our ignorance to deceive us in faith on God’s Words, so that, we will live in constant fear and remain as slaves for ruling spirits of the universe.(Gal 4:3) Yes, we lack knowledge on the spiritual powers that was given to us by Christ.*

ARE WE BLIND FOR SPIRITUAL TRUTHS ABOUT US?

Yes! God said; we are blind for the following spiritual truths:

We are blind for the Spiritual truths about God’s presence:

- > We are blind for the presence of God in our body which is temple of the Holy Spirit.(1Cor 3:16-17)
- > We are blind for the light of Christ shining on us.(Is 60:19 & Wis 6:12-14, Eph 5:14 & Wis 18:1-4))
- > We are blind for the truth that; Jesus is the Shepherd of our soul. (Ps 24:1-6, Ezkl34 :11-34 & 1Pet 2:25)
- > We are blind for the truth that; God wants to share his glory with us. (Rom 8:26-30 & Col 2:27)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth about God’s Power:

- > We are blind for the truth that; our spiritual battle with evil spirits (Eph 6:12) belongs to the Lord. (Ex 14:14, Wis 5:17 Zech 4:6-7, 2 Chr 20:15 and 1 Sam 17:47)
- > We are blind for God’s power.(Luk 1:37,Gen 18:14 & Num1:23)
- > We are blind for the power that; dwells in God’s Words. (Pro 4:20-21, Jh 11:40, Heb 1:3 & Wis 16:12).
- > We are blind for the “Saving Power” of death of Christ on the cross. (Col 2:13-15)
- > We are blind for the truth that; God’s Word is like fire and a hammer that breaks rocks (stubborn heart & disobedient mind) into pieces. (Jer 23:29)

- > We are blind for power that we receive through his love.(Ps 62:11)
- > We are blind for the power in Word of God which acts as double edged sword to deliver us from the evil spirits. (Heb 4:12)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth about God's plan:

- > We are blind to discern God's will for us, (1 Tim 1:4) and God's plan for us for a prosperous life and glorious future. (Jer 11:29)
- > We are blind for God's eternal plan for us, which is;"to bring all creation in heaven and on earth as one family with Christ as its head".(Eph 1:7-11)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth on what pleases God:

- > We are blind for the discipline that God requires of us in our physical life and spiritual life.(Sir 4:16-19 & Sir 2 :1-5)
- > We are blind to know how to please God in our life! (Ps :15:1-6, Ezkl 18:5-9, Is 58:1-12)
- > We are blind to know to repent for our sins and win favour of God. (Jonah 3:1-10 & Joel 2:1-26)
- > We are blind to understand that; God lives with humble and repentant people. (Is 57:15 & Ps 51:17)
- > We are blind to understand that; only through faith we can please God. (Rom 4:13 & 23 and Jh 11:40)
- > We are blind to receive the rest what God has promised to his children through faith. (Heb 4:1-10)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth on fullness of life:

- > We are blind know; how to receive 'life in all its fullness' which promised by Jesus? (Jh 10:10)
- > We are blind to know; how to experience 'fullness of Christ' in our life? (Col 2:26-23)
- > We are blind to know that; we have been called to glorify God's Spirit in our body. (1 Cor 6:18-20, Is 43:7 & Jer 32:38-39)
- > We are blind to know that; Jesus is the counsellor who guides us in our physical & spiritual life.(Is 9:6, Is 30:21-22 & 1 Jh 2:27)
- > We are blind for the length, breadth and depth of Christ's love for us. (Eph 3:17-20)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth on God's Promises:

- > We are blind to know; how to claim the Promises of God? (Is 62:6-7, 2 Cor 1:20, 2 Tim 2:13 & Ps 145:13)
- > We are blind for the promise on fruits of the Holy Spirit.(Gal 5:22)
- > We are blind for the promise on gifts of Spirit.(1 Cor 12:8-11)
- > We are blind for the blessings that are promised in obedience. (Duet 7:12-24 & 28:1-14 and Liv 26:3-13)

- > We are blind for the eternal life that Jesus Christ has promised after death.(Jh 11:25 & Eph 1:7-11)
- > We are blind for the "Covenant for forgiveness" that God has made with believers. (Jer 32:40-41, Zech 9:12, Mat 26:27-28)
- > We are blind to know that; God has promised sure foundation in spiritual life for his children. (1 Pet 5:10)
- > We are blind for the truth that; God's Word is the source of all blessings. (Hos 14:8, Prov 4:20-21 & Zeph 3:17)
- > We are blind on truth that; God's word is the source of life.(Jh 1:4)
- > We are blind for the truth that; Salvation is found only in the name 'Jesus'! (Jonah 2:9, Jer 23:6 & Acts 4:12)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth on power & authority:

- > We are blind for the spiritual "Power & Authority" given to us by Jesus. (Ma18:18, Mk 16:11-18, Luk 10:19 & Jh 20:21-23)

We are blind for the Spiritual truths on kingdom of God:

- > We are blind for secrets of "Kingdom of God".(1 Cor 2:6-14)
- > We are blind for the secret that; " Christ is the Key" who opens the hidden secrets of the heavenly kingdom.(Col 2: 2-3)

We are blind for the Spiritual truth on blessings in suffering:

- > We are blind for the grace that God gives us to endure our troubles, tribulations and sufferings.(2 Cor 12:9)
- > We are blind for the truth that; salvation comes only through sufferings, blood shed & sacrifice. (Luk 22:39-46 & Col 2:13-15)
- > We are blind for truth that; 'in our sufferings we take part in Christ's sufferings on behalf his body, the Church. (Col 1:24)

ARE WE BLIND FOR THE SPIRITUAL TRUTH ON PRAYER?

- >> *We are blind for the power in fasting and praying.(Esther Chap 3,4,5 & 6, Joel 2:12-27, Jon 3:1-10 & Judith Chap 12 & 13)*
- >> *We are blind for the power in "Praise & Worship", in which God reveals his awesome power. (Josh 6:1-20, Ps 23:3 & Acts 16:25-28)*
- >> *We are blind to know how to receive God's Wisdom & favour by worshiping him in the early morning before sunrise. (Wis 6:12-18)*
- >> *We are blind for the spiritual truth that; "Jesus walks through our bed room early in the morning between 3 and 6 A M to bless people who are awake to worship him." Yes, Jesus came to the disciples who were struggling in the middle of the sea sometime between 3 and 6 A M walking on water & gave them peace.(Mark 6:45-52) If you do so, Jesus will calm down all your problems!*
- >> *We are blind for truth that; "our sins are barriers between us &*

God. Hence our prayers are not answered. (Is 1:15-19 & Is 59:1-3)
 >> We are blind to know what pleases the Lord when come to
 Worship him. (Ps 15:1-6, Ezkl 18:5-9 & Is 58:1-12)

ARE WE BLIND FOR SPIRITUAL TRUTH ABOUT SIN?

- > We are blind for the truth that; 'our sins displeases God' and hence we lose the Kingdom of God. (Is 50:1-2, Is 58:1-2, 1 Cor 6:9-10 & Gal 5:16-21)
- > We are blind for the truth that; sin has brought death in to this world. (Wis1:12, Wis 2:23-24, Jer 9:21, Ezkl 12:11-12 & Rom 5:12)
- > We are blind for the truth that; we are sick because of our sins. (Prove Chap 2 to 7, Sir 19:4, 1Cor 6:18 & Jas 5:2-3)
- > We are blind for the truth that; we lose our blessings due to our sin and disobedience. (Duet 28:15-68 & Lev 26:14-46)
- > We are blind for the truth that; freedom (from sin) is what God has promised to give us. (Zech 12:9 ,Rom 8:1 & Gal 5:1)
- > We are blind for the truth that; "Christ" our redeemer is the only one who will set us free from slavery of sin. (Jh 8:12 & Col 2:13-15)
- > **We are blind to know the truth that; "God has given us power to rule over sin".** (Wis 6:19-21, Jer 15:19-21 & Luk 10:19)

Because we are blind for many spiritual truths, God said; we are blind for 'what God has spoken about us' and for the "spiritual powers that he has promised us". If we know how to claim God's promises and to use the spiritual powers, we can rule over our sinful weaknesses and reject Satan, to live in complete freedom.

In the next Chapter we will understand the second part of God's Promise: "I will lead my blind people through the **"roads that they have never travelled"** and turn their darkness into light, and make the rough country road smooth before them. These are my promises and I will keep them without fail. (Is 42:16)

Before
 we Proceed
 to next Question
 It is Time for Reflection.

QUESTION NO-16

WHAT ARE THE ROADS WHICH GOD SAYS WE HAVE NEVER TRAVELLED?

Now let us understand; "What are these roads which God says that that; we have never travelled?" To understand this truth we should know "what is God's eternal plan for us?"

WHAT IS GOD'S ETERNAL PLAN?

The eternal plan of God was revealed to St Paul as he has brought out in his letter to Ephesians. He said; "All things are done according to God's plan and decision. God has chosen us to be his own people in union with Christ because of his own purpose based on what he has decided from the very beginning. (Eph 1:11) Even before the world was made, God has already chosen us to be his through our union with Christ, so that we will be holy and without fault before him. Because of his love, God had already decided through Jesus Christ, that he would make us his sons. This was his pleasure and purpose.(Eph 1:5) **In all his wisdom and insight God did what he purposed and made known to us the secret plan he had already decided to complete by means of Christ.**

This plan, which God will complete when time is right, is to bring all creation to gather, everything in heaven and on earth with Christ as head. (Eph 1: 9-10) In human wisdom we will not be able to understand what God's eternal plan is, and how God will fulfil it? But if we are filled with God's wisdom, the Holy Spirit will explain the secrets of heavenly Kingdom. (1 Cor 2:7-14) The Holy Spirit will give us 'the Wisdom from above' to understand how his eternal plan works and how God will accomplish his eternal plan through his people, using them as his instruments in Salvation work.(2 Tim 2:21-22)

EIGHT ROADS THROUGH WHICH GOD LEADS HIS CHOSEN PEOPLE

To accomplish his eternal plan God leads his children in different roads. We are just handmade of God, hence we must surrender our mind and fill ourselves with God's words and meditate on it, so that God may give insight & wisdom to understand his eternal plan. (Sir 6:37) Also we should offer ourselves to be used as instruments to accomplish God's eternal plan. To accomplish his

eternal plan God leads his children in different roads (spiritual journey). We should understand that all people on earth will not be chosen for this task. And all who are chosen for this task will not be guided to walk on the same road. Each person according to his faith, endurance, spiritual maturity, willingness to work for salvation, and thirst for the kingdom of God will be guided by God to walk in different spiritual path which God calls as "roads that common people have never travelled". **Now let us understand "what are the different spiritual roads through which God leads his chosen people?"**

Road never travelled-1: Gift of Visions & Dreams; The Word of God said; "This is what I will do in the last days. I will pour out my Spirit on everyone. **Your sons and daughters will proclaim my message; your young men will see visions and your old man will have dreams.**"(Joel 2:28-32 & Acts2:17) Yes, God reveals his plan to chosen people through visions/dreams, guides them, and leads them in specific spiritual journey, to accomplish it. When God leads them in this road, he fills them with abundance of grace, endurance, wisdom and spiritual gifts so that his servants are able to accomplish what God intends, thereby believers accept these people as "servants of God", respect them, listen to them and obey them. Some chosen people who were led in such a spiritual journey as we read in Bible are; Samuel, Daniel, Jacob, Moses, Elijah & many others like "Mother of God - St Mary," St Paul, St Peter and St John.

Mother Mary had a Vision: In his eternal plan, God chose Mary to be the Mother of God. Even before God revealed his plan to her, he prepared Mary. She herself was conceived in her mother's womb without original sin so that she would become the Mother of God. This is how God prepared Mary and filled her with abundance of Grace. This was made possible by God to accomplish his eternal plan in Salvation of mankind. **Mary was given a vision where Angel Gabriel appeared to her and gave the message about God's will that she would become the Mother of Jesus. Mary offered herself saying; "I am the handmaid of God; let it happen according to his will."**(Luk 1:26-38). Though Mary offered herself to submit to God's will, at that point of time Mother Mary was completely unaware about her future and God's plan for her Son Jesus in salvation of mankind. ***Mother Mary was led in the road that no women on earth have ever travelled as we read in the Gospel.***

Jacob had a dream: God spoke to Jacob in a dream and said that he is giving him and his descendants the land where he slept and blessed the land which was later known as Bethel. Later the Israelites

were blessed in that land where they multiplied like sands of the sea.(Gen 28:10-22)

Joseph had a dream: Joseph, the righteous man who was engaged to Mary in marriage. Having learnt that Mary was already conceived before marriage, he was planning to break-off the engagement quietly. That night an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream and enlightened him that Mary has been conceived by power of Holy Spirit. The angel also told him not to break the engagement because Mary is chosen to become "Mother of Jesus" to accomplish God's eternal plan in Salvation. (Mat 1:18-24) Guided by the angel, Joseph obeyed God's message and accepted Mary as his wife.

The three Kings had a dream: On birth of Jesus Christ, the three Kings from east visited the new born child at Bethlehem and were about to go to the king Herod to tell him about the place of birth of Jesus. At night they were warned in a dream by an angel of the Lord not to visit Herod while returning, because of his evil plan to kill the child. The three Kings obeyed Lord's message returned to their country through different route. (Mat 2:7-12) The eternal plan of God that; Jesus has to die at the age of thirty three for the forgiveness of sins of mankind was fulfilled through this dream.

Road never travelled -2: Gift of Prophecy: In the bible we read that many prophets were chosen by God before birth of Christ. They prophesied God's message to kings and people to turn away from sin to receive God's mercy. God also used these prophets to prophesy the future as it was revealed to them by God. These people underwent many hardships & sufferings because they spoke truth. They gave God's messages on the sinfulness of kings and people as it was told to them. They did not change or alter God's message to please Kings or teachers of law or people. Hence they went through persecution. In spite of all sufferings they remained loyal to their call and served the Lord faithfully. Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Joel, Jonah and John the Baptist are few of the prophets among them.

Road never travelled -3: Gift of Wisdom. God chose some people, gave special gift; 'Wisdom', and revealed many spiritual truths so that they will lead people in righteous path. They used this gift to enlighten people on spiritual truths. Also they warned people to give up sin and live righteous life. Prophets; Esdras, Ezra, Baruch, Amos, Nehemiah, Zechariah, Daniel and Sirach are few among such people. God gave such great wisdom to King Solomon that no King on earth had such wisdom. This Wisdom guided him to write the

Books: Wisdom of Solomon, Proverbs and Ecclesiastes. (2 Chr 1:7-12) These books in the Bible give great and wise advice for righteous living. Similarly Prophet Sirach was blessed with great Wisdom. He wrote the Book-Sirach which teaches righteous ways of living to please God. Joseph and Daniel were blessed with such Wisdom to interpret their Kings' dreams which earned them the status as the Governor of the country. (Gen 41:1-57) and (Dan2:1-48)

Roads never travelled -4: Witnessing Truth against death;

Daniel's faith in living God was tested. He was thrown in a lion pit and remained there for seven days because he worshipped the living God and refused to worship the King's image on the King's order. However God was with Daniel to protect him and save his life.

During the period of Daniel, three righteous men Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego who served King Nebuchadnezzar were tested for their faith. They did not give-up their faith and refused to worship the golden statute as per the King's order. Hence they were thrown in fire by the king. But God was with them all through their sufferings to protect them. He rescued them by sending an angel. The King was amazed by their faith and God's presence with them. He honoured them by giving a higher position in his Ministry.

What we need to understand here is; Daniel, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were led by the Spirit of God to testify their faith. They were taken to point of death. Since they were firm in faith and did not hesitate to die, God was faithful to his promise: 'Even when we go through the valley of death, we will not be afraid, for Christ is there with us. His shepherd rod & staff will protect us'. (Ps 23:4) And Christ saved them from death. (In the book-Daniel we learn how God made them to walk in the road that ordinary people do not travel)

Road never travelled-5: Gifts of Holy Spirit to do special task:

God gives gifts of Spirit (1 Cor 12:8-11) to chosen children to be used for special purpose which is to continue the Ministry of Christ. Such gifts are: Wisdom, Knowledge, Faith, Power to heal, Power to work miracles, Gift of speaking God's messages, Ability to tell the difference between gifts that come from Spirit and that not, Ability to speak in strange tongue, and Ability to explain what is said. **We come across many men of God possessing some of these gifts.** They use these gifts to harvest souls for Christ and bring glory to God. These are the roads that people normally do not travel. But chosen people are led in these roads by God to accomplish his eternal plan.

Road never travelled-6: Witnessing Christ: Our ultimate goal in life is; “to witness to Christ” for which we have been specially called for by God who said; “I have called you by name; you are mine. (Is 43:1-2)“You will be my witnesses to in Jerusalem, in all Judaea, and Samaria and to the ends of the earth”. (Acts 1:8)

We witness to Christ in many ways. Such as;

- >> Giving testimony on various miracles we have encountered.
- >> Various special events / incidents through which our life was transformed as a new being in Christ and saved in faith.
- >> How we have been healed in our incurable disease?
- >> How we have been saved from a sure danger in life? May be miraculous escape in accident/riots/troubles/terror attack etc.
- >> How we have been guided by God in difficult times? And how he brought to the place of safety?
- >> When we repented truly, how God restored everything what we lost due to sin?
- >> How we have been saved? From those sinful bondage/sinful relations/ witchcraft, black magic/satanic worship etc.
- >> How God made things possible for them? Those things which they never thought it could ever happen at all!

By witnessing Christ we bring people in to faith, and thus harvest souls for Christ. We know that God is a giver of all good things, (Wis 16:25 & Jas 1:5) never denies good things to his obedient children. (Ps 84:11) He is in full control of everything and never stops doing good things for his people. (Jer 32:40-42) God who blesses his children, also chooses some people specially and makes them to undergo sufferings. Yes, God puts them to test as he permitted the Satan to test Job. (Job 1:6 -12)

Such people go through fire and flood in life. But God does not test them beyond their power to remain firm; at the time when they are put to test he also gives them strength to endure, and provides a way out. (1 Cor 10:13) But, God turns their sufferings in to a great blessings by giving them with spiritual gifts.

Then he uses them as his instrument for witnessing Christ to the ends of the earth to bring more souls in faith. This is how some people are chosen specially and led through difficult roads which are less travelled by others. The author of this book is one such person who went through such sufferings to witness Christ as bought out in next Chapter.

Road never travelled-7: Sacrificing life for others. Some people stand as witness to Christ by “sacrificing their life” for people unknown to them. Many pilots of aircraft have sacrificed their life to save life of passengers in emergencies /accidents. Many persons in uniform, (armed forces /police service) lay down their life in order to save life of people from terrorists, and by losing their life in rescue operations in natural disaster.

They stand as witness Words of Christ, who said; “there is no greater love than sacrificing your own life for others’. (Jh 15:13) Some people sacrifice their life to witness their faith in Christ. We read that a woman along with her seven sons laid down their life to witness their faith in living God. (2 Macc 7:1-49) In recent times we saw news in our TV screen that; terrorists shot down Christians in Africa and beheaded Christians for their faith in Middle East countries. The victims for such circumstances were led through the road that is not travelled by people in normal life.

Road never travelled-8: Chronic sickness: Many Christians who have resolute faith, undergo chronic sickness for which there is no medication. Their sickness does not respond to medicines.

God gives such sickness to chosen people with a specific purpose as we read below:

To Glorify God: In such chronic sufferings people glorify God’s Spirit in their body. **St Paul glorified God in his perpetual suffering.** He said; ‘I am happy then, to be proud of my suffering in order to feel the protection of Christ’s power over me. I am content with my weakness, sickness, insult, hardships, persecution and difficulties for Christ’s sake.(2 Cor 12:9-10) **Yes, we glorify God in our chronic sufferings, for God said:** “Don’t you know that your body is temple of Holy Spirit, who lives in you and who was given to you by God. You do not belong to yourself but to God; he bought you for a price. (Blood of Christ) So use your body for God’s glory”. (1Cor 6:19-20)

To Share sufferings of Christ: God also gives such sickness to chosen people to take part in ‘uncompleted sufferings’ of Christ for salvation of mankind. St Paul said; People who go through chronic sickness, perpetual mental harassment, denial of justice, denial of legitimate rights, who undergo physical torment, physical and mental abuse are the persons who help to complete what still remains of Christ’s suffering on behalf of his body; the Church. (Col 1:24) These are the roads that people do not travel in their normal life.

To keep away pride: Some people who are very close to God are blessed with many spiritual gifts to do his ministry. But, they also suffer from chronic sickness which cannot be healed through medicine. God give them chronic disease because, such people who are greatly blessed by him should not be swollen with pride because of their spiritual blessings. This sickness will make them humble before God and men.

One such example we see in Scripture is St Paul. There is no greater evangelist than St Paul on the earth, because he had travelled to many countries and preached faith in Christ. But, St Paul was going through a great untold suffering in his body. He asked the Lord thrice to heal him. God did not heal him, but said; "My Grace is sufficient for you; for my power is greatest when you are weak" (2 Cor 12:9) St Paul reacts to this, and said; "To keep me from puffed up with pride, because of wonderful visions I saw, I was given a painful ailment which acts as Satan's messenger to beat me and keep me from being proud."(2 Cor 12:7) This is how God uses our sickness to check our pride.

Satanic sickness: People who are chosen by God for his ministry go through severe satanic attacks to understand the "depth of God's love", "power in God's words," and power in "praise and worship". These attacks will manifest in them as rare sickness which cannot be identified by medical science and be treated. Such diseases will be healed only through fasting, praying and by reposing faith in Christ's Words. The author of this book has experienced many such satanic diseases and was healed by Words of Christ - Not by medicine! (Wis 16:12 & 26)

Dear believer, God in his mercy choses some people to himself, keeps them very close to him and leads them through very difficult path. In this path God reveals them the following;

- >> *How much deep is his love for mankind? (Eph 3:17)*
- >> *How precious we are in God's eyes? (Is 43:4)*
- >> *How precious is human life on earth? (1 Cor 6:19-21)*
- >> *How word of God will heal them? (Wis 16:12 & 26)*
- >> *How his power will deliver them? (Is 51:6-8)*
- >> *How God will fight for them and protect them? (Is 49:25-26)*
- >> *How sin will destroy human body. (Sir 19:4 & Jas 5:2-3)*
- >> *How we lose Kingdom of God. (1 Cor 6:9-10 & Gal 5:16-21)*
- >> *How people lose blessings due to sin? (Duet 26:14- 68)*
- >> *How God lead us in righteous life? (Is58:1-12 & Ezkl 18:5-9)*

>> How God can change situations in their favour? (Jdt 8-15)

>> How God will lead them in the valley of death? (Ps 23:4)

>> How his presence and his splendour will go before them and to give victory. (Ex 33:14 & 19)

The Chosen people are blessed to walk through these roads in which common people do not travel. In this difficult path God reveals himself to them in many ways, acknowledges that his presence is real and that he will do wonderful things through them.

God said; "Such people will be famous among nations; everyone who sees them will know, that they are the people whom God has blessed". (Is 61:3) To the blessings received by such chosen people St Paul refers them as blessings beyond human understanding. He said; "What no one ever saw or ever heard, what no one ever thought could happen is the very thing God has prepared for those who love him." (1 Cor 2:9) God blesses chosen people who travel in difficult spiritual roads that common people do not travel.

This is how the following promise of God gets fulfilled in man:

"I will lead my blind people through the roads that they have never travelled. I will turn their darkness into light and make the rough country road smooth before them. These are my promises that I will keep them without fail."(Is 42:16)

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO-17

AUTHOR'S TESTIMONY

THE SPIRITUAL ROADS THAT THE AUTHOR OF THIS BOOK TRAVELLED

My spiritual journey with Christ started in the year 1997. It all started with series of sickness. At first I did not understand that it was a call from the Lord to know more about his words, his power, and his everlasting love to enlighten the world about it. In the wildest of my imagination I never anticipated that I will be writing books on spiritual truths which I am now deeply in to. Because, I was serving as a Commissioned Officer in the Indian Air Force. But if the Lord has willed it to be so, I am just his hand made. And I comply with his will. That's how my life was transformed through various spiritual experiences with Christ, which I encountered in last twenty five years. Yes, I have travelled through the roads of sickness and various satanic attacks as brought out below:

Spiritual encounter-1: During the years 1994-96, I hit a road block in my health. God gave me four major illness which could not be healed through medication as below:

> A sports injury in spine (L4 & L5 region) which never allowed me to live normal life. I was enduring terrible suffering.

>> The painkillers I consumed due to above illness resulted in peptic-ulcer, which often caused bleeding in stomach.

>>> I had severe pain in both my shinbone which never allowed me to run and take part in sports activities.

>>>> I developed "osteophyte". It is a bone growth in the spine at T-10 region which was pressing against the spinal cord causing unbearable pain & suffering. On the basis of MRI report, Apollo Hospital- Chennai advised surgery and also cautioned me that I would be paralysed below my chest if surgery is not done.

With all these sickness I attended a 'five-day' retreat at Divine Retreat Centre, Chalakuduy, Kerala-India, in the month March 1997. During the retreat, I took great interest know more about Scriptures, and in faith filled myself with God's words. In the course of the retreat I was touched by Christ. I received healing in my spine and in stomach (peptic-ulcer). On returning back to Air Force base, I could run ten KMs without any difficulty for Christ had healed my

shinbones. Further I never underwent surgery in spine for the osteophyte. **It is twenty-five years now, I did not experience any pain or difficulty in my spine because of osteophyte. I was healed of all four major ailments without medicine, but only through faith in the living words of Christ.**

Through these miracles God brought me close to him. Faith in Christ and his words took deep root in me. I started to worship Christ in early morning before sunrise. I made it a practice to read bible with faith before sunrise standing on my knees.

Spiritual encounter-2: -A deep wound of the size of a lemon developed in my body oozing pus and blood. This wound developed without any external injury or infection. The cause for the wound could not be identified by pathological tests in best of the hospitals in Bangalore -India. It did not respond to any medication for forty days. However the Holy Spirit was prompting me to surrender my sins and observe purity in body, because, our body is the temple of Holy Spirit. (1 Cor 3:16-17) I responded to this call and surrendered my sins and my life in the hands of the Lord. Finally, God healed my un-healing wound. It was such a big miracle that gave me 'sure foundation' in faith.

Through this miracle God gave me understanding on the spiritual truths;

That; "The sins we commit will hurt our body" (Sir 19:4)

That; "If we sin, our body will be sick" (Sir 21:2-3, &38:9-10)

That; "If you believe you will see the Glory of God" (Jh 11:40)

God wanted that; I should surrender my life and live only for him, and him alone.

"This un-healing wound was a call from the Lord through which my spiritual journey with Christ began. (This happened in August-September 2000)

Spiritual encounter- 3: Followed by the above healing, I experienced chronic Urinary Tract Infection which did not respond to medication for more than two months. It became severe and affected my kidneys and urinary bladder. It was so severe that one day in the morning at 5 AM I could not pass urine. There was so much inflammation in the urinary track that it blocked the flow of urine. I did not run to a doctor. All I did was, I knelt down and sang 'songs of praises' to the Lord in loud voice almost for one hour. By 6

AM a miracle happened. The urinary track opened and I could pass urine normally. Thereafter, I never experienced such a problem.

In this miracle God revealed that his presence and power is awesome in our Praise & Worship. (Ps 22:3) In Bible we read that such incident happened when Joshua and his army went around the Town Jericho singing and shouting praises to the Lord which made the city wall to come down crashing on the seventh day. (Josh 6:1-20) *This miracle took place in January 2001. But, my UTI was not healed. I continued medication and was running after doctors. One day when I was in the Infant Jesus Church-Bangalore, I heard a voice telling me; "When I am here to heal you why do you run after doctors". I responded to this voice.*

Against all my understanding and knowledge I had about the effect of UTI on kidneys, I dared to throw away all medicines and stopped visiting doctors. Against all odds, I dared to hope in the Lord. I went through fire and flood in my health. The infection was so severe that I discharged pus every time I urinated. But, by the grace of God I did not lose sight on the Lord's words that he is an impossible God and can work wonders to heal me. (Prov 4:20-21)..The ordeal of discharge of pus continued for two-three months. Then it stopped showing sign of reduction in infection.

But by then my kidneys were affected. My urine output was reduced due to which every now and then I use to get fever, swelling in my face, hands and legs. More severe the problem was, the more intense was my fasting, prayer, praise and worship. This was the time I came very close to the Lord by reading the Bible thoroughly. I was searching for a Word of God which will heal me. This ordeal continued for three years, till December 2003. I was fighting against Satan for my Kidneys with the help of Word of God. After three years one day during Christmas Eve in 2003, I felt something leaving my body. I felt the deliverance and healing. It took three years for full recovery through fasting and prayer. (This happened in during the period between December 2000 and December 2003).

Spiritual encounter - 4: I was experiencing an Uncontrollable giddiness as though I was drunk, for one month. The cause for such illness could not be identified by doctors in two super specialty hospitals in Bangalore. (Air Force Command Hospital and Manipal Hospital) I was advised series of tests and scanning of brain. Al through, I was meditating on the word of God, asking the Lord to heal me. My appointment for scanning was fixed. When I was about to undergo brain scanning, in the radiology lab, I felt the deliverance-

I felt something leaving me. The feeling of giddiness stopped and I became normal.

I was healed only by reposing trust in Christ's promises, and claiming them; Yes, Jesus Christ promised;

"I will never leave you nor will I forsake you". (Heb 13:5) And,

"I will deliver you from the power of the wicked"(Jer 15:21) (This miracle happened in June 2001)

Spiritual encounter- 5: **When I was writing the book "The Answer"** which explains the secrets of sin and the works of Satan, suddenly I came under satanic attack. I experienced 'Uncontrollable sinus' leading to continuous discharge of pus from my nose. The sinus was very severe and was not responding for medication for more than ten days. Hence doctors advised me for surgery. I was very upset with what was happening because I never had history of sinus. One day, while I was conducting budget conference in the office, my mind was in communion with the Lord. Though I was conducting conference, my mind kept praying to the Lord asking; why I was suffering with this new disease?

The Lord asked me one question; "My son what are you doing in the early morning"?

I answered him saying that; Lord, I am praying and writing the book 'The Answer'.

Again the Lord asked me; "About what are you writing"?

I told him that; Lord, "I am writing a book on secrets of sin and about works of the Satan"

Then the Lord told me; "that is why the Satan is attacking you because, you are divulging his secrets".

Further God said; "My son take my shield as your protection from satanic attack" for "Faith" is your shield against all the burning arrows shot by the evil one." (Eph 6:16) Immediately I prayed that; "The Lord is my Shepherd and my shield" and, accepted "Blood of Christ" as my shield against satanic attack. Dear believers you will not believe. Yes. I was healed instantly during the conference and pus stopped oozing out of my nose. My sinus was completely healed within three days without medication. There after I never experienced such illness. (This miracle happened in Feb 2003 when I was posted at Allahabad)

Spiritual encounter- 6: **The satanic attack continued. As I continued to work on the book - The Answer, I experienced severe rashes on the body. By now I understood that it was a satanic attack,**

and prayed for protection of Christ over me. I felt the healing. Slowly the rashes disappeared. **I was healed only through faith in Jesus Christ for his words says: If you believe, it happen to you as you believed (Mat 8:13)** (This happened in March 2003)

Spiritual encounter - 7: One fine morning between 4 to 4.30 AM when I was writing this book "The Answer" the Satan attacked me. (Early morning between 4 to 6 AM is the time when I write books) I felt a sharp instrument moving in my throat and slitting it. It started to bleed in my throat. I had to spit out the blood. By the grace of God, I knew that it was the Satan who has done this. I did not run to a doctor nor did I tell anyone about it. **I claimed the promise of the Lord written in the book Wisdom which says; "It is your Word that maintains those who put their trust in you" (Wis 16:26)** **I meditated on this promise.** This promise of the Lord restored the wound/damage caused by the Satan, and my throat was healed. Within fifteen minutes bleeding in my throat stopped.

Through this miracle God revealed following a great spiritual truths:

> That; "Our body was created by the Word of the Lord, (Gen 1:24-31) and that our body will respond to God's words.

>> That; God's words will recreate (or) reconstruct (or) heal the wounds in our body, if we believe in his words, accept his words as truth, and put his words to test (1 Thess 5:19-20 & Phil 4:9) to experience God's power to work in our body.(1 Thess 2:13)

>>> That; every word spoken by God as written in the Bible is true, and that, they are active and living words. (Heb 4:12) (This happened in March 2003)

Spiritual encounter - 8: I fell ill with high fever for two days in September 2016. The blood pressure went very low, hence I was admitted to Army hospital, New Delhi. On the day I was admitted, my heart rate/pulse went down very low. The pulse was only 33 (Thirty three only). In medical terms it is known as 'Bradycardia'. I was transferred to Cardiac ICU. And remained there for one week. The pulse rate remained below 40 for one day. Then slowly increased to 45 to 55 the next day. It took three/four days for the pulse to revive and to come to normal.

All through one week in the Cardiac ICU the Lord kept speaking to me that he will revive me & heal me. He spoke through Is 41, Ps 91 and 23 and said that he will protect me and heal me. I kept meditating on the promises that the Lord gave me in Is 41, Ps

91 & 23. God's words revived me and made me live a normal life. This was a very serious satanic attack on my heart to end my life, because, I was doing the Lord's work. But Lord in his mercy delivered me from his clutches. (Happened in September 2016)

Spiritual encounter - 9: I was experiencing severe bleeding in the stomach, and in the intestines. Once again it was an attack on me. I was healed through regular fasting on Fridays and by meditating on the Word 'No medicine or ointment cured them. They were restored to health by your Word O Lord, the Word which heals all humanity" (Wis 16:12) (Happened in September 2016).

Spiritual encounter -10: As I continued to do the Lord's work and the Satan continued to attack me. Suddenly there were some lumps which came on palm of both my feet. When I walk it was very uncomfortable and sometimes it was painful. Such lumps come for diabetic patients in advanced stage. I really got worried. But, I was fully aware that it was satanic attack. So I prayed to the Lord to protect me and heal me. The Lord guided me to observe fasting for three days and nights by drinking only water.(We read in the book Esther where she orders the Jews to observe fasting for three days and nights without eating and drinking to win favour of the Lord to fight against persecution of Jews by the evil man Haman. The Lord showed them his favour. Esther and Jews won over the persecution ordered by Haman by observing fasting)

I observed fasting for three days and nights. The Lord finally spoke to me through the book Nahum and said; "Even though the Assyrians are strong and numerous they will be destroyed and disappear. My people, I made you suffer, but I will not do it again. I will end Assyria's power over you and break the chains that bind you." (Nah 1:12-13)

The Lord broke the satanic power and protected me. Every day, I meditate on this promise and claim the Lord's faithfulness for his promise. (Ps 147:13 & 2 Tim 2:13) Though the lumps in my feet have not vanished, they do not create any problem for me because; I walk on this problem every day claiming the promise; "I have given you authority to walk on snakes and scorpions and overcome the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you" (Luk 10:19) (Happened between Jan to July 2019) Yes, I walk on my problem with Christ.

Here God teaches us that; if you live with Christ in humble obedience to his word, he will help you to walk on all your problems,

your sickness, and your sinfulness. Christ will transform you, and you will become as hard as a diamond and as firm as a rock against evil spirits. (Ezkl 3:8-9) Your problems, your sickness and your sinful desires & weaknesses will fight against you, but they cannot harm and defeat you. Because Christ will be with you to protect you and give you victory. He will deliver you from the power of the wicked. (Jer 15:19-21)

Spiritual encounter - 11: As I continued to work for the Lord, the Satan continued his attacked on me. This time he attacked my heart for second time to end my life. I went through a lot of physical disturbance in heart resulting in irregular heart beating. I used to feel that something pushing my heart left and right and I became so uncomfortable and disturbed. It was not allowing me to remain at peace. Every second or third minute I experienced physical movement in my heart, from left to right which no one will believe.

When I prayed to the Lord, once again he told me to observe fasting for three days and nights, drinking only water. I obeyed the Lord and observed fasting. All three days the Lord kept speaking to me that he will heal me and restore my heart.

On completion of fasting, God promised me to break the powers of the darkness through his promise. Once again he spoke through the book Nahum as he promised earlier to heal my legs. He said: "Even though the Assyrians are strong and numerous they will be destroyed and disappear. My people I made you suffer, but I will not do it again. I will end Assyria's power over you and break the chains that binds you" (Nah 1:12-13). After God promised to break the power of Satan over me, the disturbance in my heart was completely stopped. Now I live in peace. (Happened in July 2019)

MESSAGE TO BELIEVERS

Dear Believers, all your illnesses will be healed through fasting, prayer, meditating on the Word of God and by using faith as shield against the satanic attacks.(Eph6:14-17) These are the roads in which people do not travel unless they are chosen. But Jesus said; "I have chosen you and appointed you to go and to bear much fruits, the kind of fruits that endures.(Jh 15:16) He also said; "You are the Chosen generation, the King's Priest, the holy nation, God's own people, chosen to proclaim wonderful acts of God, who called you out of darkness in to his marvellous light."(1Pet 2:9)

Yes believers, you too are a chosen person if you are humble in heart, obedient in mind, and willing to do God's will by surrendering your will to him. If you are willing to walk with Christ, he will lead you by his eternal light. (Is 60:19) Then, you will receive wisdom & insight to understand that we live by Words spoken by God and not by bread alone. (Mat 4:4)

Christ will lead you in this road to strengthen your faith, to reveal that his Words are living Words and that there power in his Words. Thus, you will understand that; man lives by God's Spirit (Jh 6:63) and witness the truth to the world that; our body was created by Words spoken by God (Gen 1:24-28) and, our body will be healed by God's Words. (Wid 16:12)

God will lead you in this road to take away your fears, give conviction in faith, confidence in ministry and Sure Foundation in life, so that you will win victory in this Holy War against evil spirits. (Eph 6:12)

Yes, this is how the following Word of God gets fulfilled;

"He trains me for battle and prepares me for war". (Ps 144:1)

"The Lord has called out his proud and confident soldiers to fight a holy war and punish those who he is angry with." (Isaiah 13:3)

**Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection**

QUESTION NO-18

WHO CAN RULE OVER SATAN FOREVER?

This question is very interesting. It brings a lot of inquisitiveness to know; "whether one can really have power to rule over sin and the Satan forever"?

The Answer is "Yes"!

Dear believers, God has promised us to give power to rule over our sinful-self and Satan forever. In the book Wisdom of Solomon, God promised; "The desire for Wisdom can prepare you to rule a kingdom. So then, you that rule the nations, if you value your thrones and symbols of authority, honour Wisdom, so that you may rule forever." (Wis 6:20-21) This is the greatest promise ever that God has given man, through which man can build his spiritual life on rock, on which the Satan will have no power.(Mat 16:18). "God has assured man to give power to rule over his "sinful-self". The Satan always uses man's weaknesses for sin as a powerful weapon to lure man to commit sin repeatedly to keep him as slave for sin'. If man learns how to overcome his sinful-self, then he can rule over the Satan for ever. In this chapter we will learn how we can exercise control over our sinful-self so that we can rule over the Satan for ever.

Let us understand God's promise, Word-by-Word

God's promise giving assurance on power to rule over sin is split in three parts. And, the words are split & numbered serially from 1 to 6 so as to understand the spiritual truth hidden in them. This will enlighten believers on how they have been deceived by the Satan all these years to keep them as slaves of sin.

Part-1 of the promise:

(1) The desire for Wisdom **(2)** can prepare you to rule a kingdom (kingdom of Satan).

Part-2 of the promise:

(3) So then, you (can) rule the nations, (your sinful-self) **(4)** if you value your thrones and symbols of authority (if you value the anointment of Holy Spirit on you).

Part-3 of the promise:

(5) Honour Wisdom. (obey word of God in truth and spirit) **(6)** So that you may rule forever." (Wis 6:20-21)

1. "DESIRE FOR WISDOM"

The "desire for Wisdom" means "thirst in our heart" to know the following;

1) Who is my God? **2)** Why God has created me? **3)** What God has spoken about me? **4)** How much God loves me? **5)** What has done for me? **6)** What God wants from me? **7)** How do I please God to win his favour? **8)** What is God's will for me? **9)** What God has spoken about my sufferings? **10)** What is God's plan for me?

Dear believer, if you accept God's Word as "Truth" (Jh 17:17), recognise it as "Active Words" (Heb 4:12) regard it as "Living Words," (Jh 6:68) make it as "Source of your life" (Jh 1:4), and obey his words sincerely by surrendering your will to God's will, (Luk 11:27-28) God will open your eyes for faith. (Luk 24:30-31)

If you honour God by giving him first place in your life, (Mat 6:33) by worshipping him before sunrise between 3 and 6 AM, which highly pleases him, (Wis 6:12-18) God will open your mind for Scriptures to understand the spiritual truths hidden in his words. (Luk 24:36-48) Also, God will give you understanding on power that is dwelling in his words, (Jer 23:29) and open your mind for the secrets of heavenly kingdom. (1 Cor 2:6-12)

Once your mind is opened for Scriptures, you will gain wisdom to understand that; "Jesus Christ is the Key who opens your mind to understand the hidden treasures of God's Wisdom and Knowledge". (Col 2:3) If you receive God's wisdom and knowledge, you will know; "What is God's will for you? (Is 59:21, Mat 22:37-40 & Mat 28:18-20) What is the purpose of your existence on earth? (1 Cor:19-20) What is God's plan for you? (Jer 29:11) and What is God's eternal plan? (Eph 1:7-11)

Your understanding on God's Wisdom and Knowledge will give you awareness on: *Why God created you? (Is 43:7) How precious you are in the eyes of God? (Is 43:1-5) How precious is your life on earth? (1Pet 2:9) You will also know your importance in accomplishment of God's plan. (2 Tim 2:21) Further you will know; what will happen to your soul after death, if you die in sin? (2 Eadras 7:75-101) The awareness on the fate of your soul after death will bring fear of the Lord in you. (Sir 40:26-27) Fear of God will not allow you to commit sin because; you would like to please God in everything you do. (Ps 15:1-5, Is 58:6-12 & Ezkl18:5-9)*

The knowledge on; how precious you are in the eyes of God? What is God's plan for you? And, fate of your soul after death will not allow you to abuse your body, soul and spirit by committing sin. You will become wise and will not entertain the sin and reject all evil tricks, sinful attractions & temptations. Such attitude will transform you and set you free from your wilful sins or give freedom from your sinful-self. This is what Jesus said; "You will know the truth (on how precious is your life in the eyes of God and what is God's plan for you towards his eternal plan) and the truth (on fate of your soul after death) will set you free from the power of sin" (Jh 8:32) This is how 'desire for Wisdom' will set you free from your sinful-self.

2. "WISDOM - WILL PREPARE YOU TO RULE A KINGDOM"

When God created man and women in his own image, he blessed them and said; "Have many children, so that your children and descendants will live all over the earth and bring it under control and rule over them. (Gen 1:26-27) But what we now see is; instead if man ruling over everything "human beings have become slaves of ruling spirits of the universe."(Gal 4:3)

God said that the whole world is under the power of Satan (Gal 3:22) Yes, the whole world is captured by the inevitable fate (sin) and people are bound in the darkness by the invisible chains. (Evil bondage-Wis 17:17) Such awful thing has happened because mankind rejected teachings of Scriptures. Yes, people rejected God's Law and his living words. They chose to live by the desires of flesh. (Is 50:1-2) The light (Jesus Christ) has come in to the world; but, people rejected the light and preferred to live in darkness because their deed are evil. (Jh 3:19)

Yes, mankind refused to obey God's Law and went on their own like prodigal son. (Rom 1:21-30) Hence mankind lost its blessing in disobedience, (Duet 28:14-67) and have entered the land of exile. (Jer 13:19) Dear believer, accept God's Words and live by its teachings, surrendering your will. (Mat 6:10) Your life should be guided by his words day- by-day. (Is 30:21-22) If you do so, then, God who sees your heart and actions (1 Sam 16:7) will fill you with his grace which will transform you inwardly. God will strengthen your 'inner-self' against power of sin, (Rom 12:1-2) by filling you with fruit of Spirit; "Self-Control."(Gal 5:22)

The fruit of Holy Spirit; "Self-Control," will enrich you with power by which you can exercise control over "your sinful-self" and

reject sin in all its forms. The sinful attractions of this world, your desires for sin, your weaknesses for sin and all satanic tricks will not have influence over you to lure you to commit sin. At this stage in spiritual life, God will bless you with power as given below, to rule over the evil spirits as he promised:

>> You can walk on snakes (your weaknesses and desires to commit sin) and scorpions (worldly attractions that lures you to commit sin) and overcome the power of enemy. Your enemy the Satan will be under your feet. Nothing will harm you. (Luk 10:19)

>> You will receive power to bind evil spirits in fulfilment of the promise given by Jesus, which says; "Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven" (Mat 16:18-19 & 18:18)

>> You will receive power to heal the sick and deliver evil spirits in Jesus name as promised by him that; "Believers are given power to perform miracles and they will drive out demons in my name" (Mk 16:16-18)

Dear believers in Christ, God the Father bestowed mankind authority to rule over evil spirits, when he blessed Adam & Eve. However, mankind lost this authority because they rejected God's Law and lived in sin & darkness. But, Jesus Christ washed our sins with his precious blood. Through his death and resurrection he made a 'New Covenant' with mankind. (Mk 16:14-18) Through this new covenant Jesus Christ gave 'New Life' to mankind (Col 3:8-17) and restored authority over evil spirits which was lost due to sin. (Luk 10:19 & Mark 16:16-18)

If you are faithful to God in everything, then God will be faithful to you for all his promises. (2 Tim 2:13) Because God is faithful to his promises, he will give power to rule over evil spirits. So, let us turn back to Christ with true repentance, and be faithful to him by obeying his teachings and claim his promises for ourselves, (Is 62:6-7) and rule over the kingdom of darkness.

3. "YOU WILL RULE THE NATIONS"

Having filled with fruits of the Spirit, (love, joy, peace, patients, kindness, goodness, humility, faithfulness and self-control) more importantly "self-control" having transformed in our inner-self, having gained 'Self-Control' over our inner-being / our sinful-self, we will be delivered from the power of sin. Having cleansed our soul from

sins, God will fill us with the gifts of the Holy Spirit which are; Wisdom, Knowledge, Faith, Power to heal, Power to work miracles, Gift of speaking God's messages, Ability to tell the difference between gifts that come from Spirit and those that are not, Ability to speak in strange language and Ability to explain what is said. *At this stage in spiritual life will experience complete freedom from sin and God will give us the power over evil spirits.*

The following promise given Jesus Christ will become a reality in our life; "You can walk on snakes (your weaknesses and desires to commit sin) and scorpions (worldly attractions that lures you to commit sin) and overcome the power of enemy. Your enemy the Satan will be under your feet. Nothing will harm you. (Satanic powers which is destroying the children of God cannot harm you). (Luk 10:19) Yes, with these promises we will rule the nation of evil spirits, the kingdom of darkness.

4. "VALUE YOUR THRONE AND SYMBOLS OF AUTHORITY"

Valuing your throne:

God refers our 'physical body' as throne. God tells that we should value our physical body as the "temple of the living God" where God lives, (1 Cor 3:16-17) and keep our body holy without yielding for sin and glorify God's Spirit in us. About the importance of holiness in body & soul God has spoken as below:

>> "They are my people. I created them to glorify me." (Is 43:7)
 >> Further God amplified the above word and said; "Don't you know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who lives in you, and who was given to you by God? You do not belong to yourselves but to God. He bought you for a price. (Blood of Jesus Christ) So use your body for God's Glory. (1 Cor 6:19-20)
 >> ***It is very important for us to keep our body safe from getting defiled by sin:***

Valuing symbols of authority:

God refers the "anointment of Holy Spirit" we have received as symbols of authority: Valuing symbols means, we are supposed to give importance in protecting and honouring the anointment that we have received on the following occasions:

a) The anointment of Holy Spirit you received in the **Sacrament-Baptism** to become a member of the Church and body of Christ. God

wants that you should guard your faith in Christ and never desecrate this anointment by reposing your faith in anything created by Christ (or) any creature living on earth (or) any idol made by human hand.

b) The anointment of Holy Spirit you received in the **Sacrament- First Holy Communion** to eat Christ's body & drink his blood. God says that; you are supposed to eat his body and drink his blood in a most pure and worthy manner. (1 Cor 11:27-31) Otherwise you are desecrating/defiling the body and blood of Christ.

c) The anointment of Holy Spirit you received in the **Sacrament- Confirmation**. A member of the Church is given authority to proclaim the Good News to the world in this Sacrament. You should honour this anointment/authority by doing your best; by being holy in everything you do, give Good News to the world effectively and witness Christ at all occasions. God said; "Do not disregard the spiritual gifts; "the anointment in you", which was given to you when prophets spoke and the elders of the Church laid hands and prayed over you". (1 Tim 4:14)

d) The anointment of Holy Spirit you received in the **Sacrament- Marriage** solemnised with the spouse chosen by God (Is 34:16) and, blessed by an anointed Priest to multiply and fill the earth with descendants.

You are supposed to honour marriage only by:

>> *Marrying a person of opposite sex to maintain natural order as God decreed. (Gen 1:27-28 & 2:18-24)*

>> *There is no room for marriage between two persons of same sex. It is forbidden by God. (Lev 18:22 & 20:13 and 1 Tim 1:9-10) Those who indulge in this sin will lose the Kingdom of God and will be condemned to eternal damnation. (1 Cor 6:9-10)*

>> *Married couple must to remain faithful to each other in fidelity for God said adultery is a mortal sin. (Ex 20:14 & Heb 13:4)*

e) ***The anointment of the Holy Spirit received in the Sacrament- Ordination / Consecration of Priest as a Minister of Church for preaching and practising the Good News. (Ex 28:41 & 40:13) This also include the anointment received by Religious Brothers / Sisters when they are consecrated as bride / bridegroom of Christ in their respective ministry to serve God. (Is 54:5 & 62:4-5)***

God gives great importance for these two things:

1: "Valuing the Throne" (our physical body which is the temple of the Holy Spirit)

2: "Valuing Symbols of Authority" (anointment we received through various Sacraments)

God wants that you do not desecrate these two "Precious Gifts" in any manner to earn his displeasure. However, if you honour these two things you will win favour of the Lord. You will experience God's hand upon you always. You will be strengthened by God as Bronze wall and as an Iron pillar against evil powers as God spoke to Jeremiah. (Jer 1:19-20) Sinful attractions, your desires for sin and your sinful-weaknesses will have no power over you to make you fall.

The sins of the world and your weakness & desires for sin will fight against you. But they will not win over you, because God will be with you to protect you and give victory. (Jer 15:19-20) Yes, God will burn around you as a wall of fire and protect you from the evil one (Zech 2:5 & 2 Thess 3:3)

5. "HONOUR WISDOM"

How do one honour Wisdom?

Wisdom refers to Word of God - which is Jesus Christ. (Rev 19:13) *It is very important for us to know how to honour Wisdom. Because, people who honoured wisdom were held in very high admiration by God, as we read below:*

>> **Joseph** was a righteous man. He did not give up for the sinful desires of the Queen of Egypt, but honoured Wisdom which says; "Do not commit adultery." (Ex 20:14). Hence God regarded him highly and made him Governor of Egypt. (Gen 41:37-46)

>> **Daniel**, a righteous man risked his life to honour Wisdom. According to King's proclamation, he did not worship the king which was against God's Commandment; "Let there be no God for you other than me." (Ex 20:1-2) Hence, God raised him to a higher position. He became head of all the advisors to King in the Royal Court. (Daniel 2:46-49)

>> **Esther** was righteous woman who honoured Wisdom. She was chosen by the king to be the Queen and she brought victory to Jews against their enemies. (Esther- Chapters 2 to 10)

>> **Judith**, the widow of Manasseh was a righteous Israelite woman who spent all her time in fasting and prayer. (Judith 8:4-6) She honoured Wisdom by living holy life. (Lev 19:2 & 1Pet 1:15) Hence, God was with her and gave her courage, conviction and guided all her actions by the Spirit of Wisdom. God used her to bring victory to the Israelites against the great army of the General Holofernes. (Judith-Chapters 10 to 15)

>> **Moses** honoured Wisdom by obeying God in everything. God used him to deliver the Israelites from Egypt. (Book of Exodus)

>> **Solomon** honoured Wisdom. God gave him wisdom to write three Books of Knowledge Viz; Wisdom of Solomon, Proverbs and Ecclesiastes. Solomon was blessed by God to be the richest and wisest King lived ever. (1 Kings 3:4-14)

Because these people were faithful to God and honoured the Spirit of Wisdom all through their life, God raised them to a very high stature that; "No eyes can ever believe or no one could ever imagine that such a thing could happen." This was the destiny what God prepared for people who honoured Wisdom. (1 Cor 2:9) But, the Satan is roaming around deceive you and to steal your blessings. (1 Pet 5:8) He will deceive your mind to disobey the Spirit of Wisdom and lure you to live in sin like people of this world who does not know truth (Christ). But God says:

> "Try to learn what pleases the Lord. (Eph 5:10)

>> "Do not be fools, then, try to find out what the Lord wants from you." (Eph 5:17)

If you live life according to your desires of mind, you fulfil the desires of flesh. Word of God says; if you live life according to human nature/desires of flesh, you are going to die. But by the Spirit, if you put to death your sinful actions, you will live. Those who live by flesh will not find life. Those who live by Spirit will find life. (Rom 8:11-13) So you need to find life in Spirit. You can find life in Spirit, if only you honour Wisdom.

Now let us understand, how do one honour wisdom? You honour Wisdom in the following manner:

1. Search for the kingdom of God above all things: It means to place Christ above all things, by worshipping him before sunrise

between 3 and 6 AM. If you sacrifice the most pleasure full sleep in the early morning to worship Christ, you will encounter his presence because, he is looking for those who seek his face by sacrificing their sleep in early morning. Then, Christ will give you power to walk on your sinful weaknesses and sinful desires which are making you fall in sin repeatedly. You will walk on your sins like how Jesus walked on water. You will not drown in the sea of sin like how the people of this world are drowned deep in the sea of sin. (Sinful life)

2. Obedience to Word of God. Just worshipping the Lord in the early morning will not suffice. You have to obey the Word of God in truth & spirit, (Luk 11:27-28) and obey the inspired messages. (1 Thess 5:19-20) "Whether it pleases you or not, you have to obey what the Lord says. All will go well with you if you obey him." (Jer 42:6) Jesus said: "Whoever accepts my command and obeys them is the one who love me. My Father will love whoever love me; I too will love him and reveal myself to him." (Jh 14:21) Therefore, without obedience to Word of God, you cannot please God. In obedience, you gain God's favour.

3. Consult the Lord in everything you do: You should lift up your plans /proposals on all-important issues in life by fasting and prayer and ask the Lord whether it pleases him or not. (Prov16:3) God will definitely answer your prayer and guide you in your decision through his words. The peace that God gives in fasting & prayer will guide you in the decisions you make. (Col 3:15) The decisions what you make after fasting & prayer will come from God himself. (Duet 1:17) King David consulted the Lord twice before he attacked the Philistines and God gave him victory on both the occasions.(1 Chr 14:8-17)

If you are sincere in seeking his face before sunrise, consult him on important issues /proposals, obey the inspired messages and his teachings in all circumstances, honour the anointment you received when the elders of the Church laid their hands on you and prayed,(1 Tim 4:14) practice your faith without doubting the power in Word of God,(Jas 1:5-6 & 22-24) you will experience the Spirit of God burning around you as wall of fire protecting you as God promised that; "he himself will be a wall of fire around the city (you) to protect it and that he will live there in all his glory. (Zach 2:5)

If you honour Wisdom in this manner, the Lord will transform you and strengthen your inner-self. You will become an iron pillar and wall of bronze against Satan.(Jer 1:18-19) He cannot make you fall for temptations. Yes, he cannot defeat you. (Jer 15:19-20). You

will become as firm as a rock and as hard as a diamond against all your weaknesses /desires, which are making you to fall in sin repeatedly. (Ezkl 3:8-9) By the richness & power that dwells in God's Words, (Col 3:16) God will break all your weaknesses & desires to commit sin in to pieces and deliver you, for God's words is like fire and a hammer that will break the rocks (your stubborn heart & disobedient mind) in to pieces. (Jer 23:29)

God's powerful weapons (Gifts of the Spirit & Armour of God) will help you to break all the strongholds of evil within you and around you. You will be able to pull down every powerful obstacle (your desires for sin and weaknesses for sin - standing against your spiritual life) that are raised against God (2 Cor 10:4) Then Jesus who is King of Kings (Rev 17:14) will break all your bondages & invisible chains that are binding you, open the way and will lead you out of exile. (Your sinful bondage) (Micah 2:13)

Hence, you will walk in light of the Lord. (Sir 50:28-29) Yes, God will make it possible for you to walk in light of the Lord. The sun will not hurt you during the day and the moon will not hurt us in the night. (Ps 121:4-8). The sun will not be the light for you in day nor will moon be light by night. The Lord himself will be your eternal light leading you in the road of holiness. (Is 35:1-10) The light of God's glory will shine upon you. Your days of grief and distress will come to an end. (Is 60:19-20)

Yes, when you honour "Wisdom" & "Anointment in you" God will break all the strong holds of evil power in you. He will give you a new heart and a new mind. He will take away your stubborn heart of stone and give an obedient heart. (Ezkl 11:19) You will receive freedom from your sinful desires and weaknesses which are causing you to fall in sin repeatedly. You will be as free and happy as calves let out of stall. On the day when God acts, you will overcome your sinful-self. Your sinful desires and weaknesses will be like dust under your feet. (Malachi 4:2-3) The sun will not be your light by day nor moon by night. Because the glory (light) of God will shine on you and the Lamb (Christ) will be your lamp. You will walk by light of Christ. (Rev 21:23-24)

6. "YOU WILL OVER RULE YOUR SINFUL-SELF FOR EVER"

At this stage in spiritual life, God will give Sure Foundation as he promised. He said; "After you have suffered a little while, the God of all graces who called you to share his eternal glory in union with

Christ, will himself perfect you, give firmness, strength and a sure foundation" (1 Pet 5:10). This sure foundation in faith will help you to walk on snakes, (weaknesses & desires), and scorpions (worldly sinful attractions) and overcome power of enemy (Satan) and rule over him forever. (Luk 10:19)

"You will receive authority over nations and kingdoms, (which are the temptations and sinful attractions of this world) to uproot and pull down all strongholds and evils in you, to destroy and to overthrow (your sinful-self), to build and plant righteousness" as God promised to Jeremiah (Jer 1:8-10) Further, "You will receive power to resist temptations and reject the Satan. (Jas 4:7, Prov 2:16) You will be like a fortified city, an iron pillar, and a bronze wall. The evil one can't defeat you for the Lord will be with you". (Jer 1:18-19)

Yes dear believers; by the help of 'Spirit of Wisdom' which you will receive by seeking his face in early morning-worship, by the 'Favour of God' which you will receive in fasting & prayer, by the 'Faith' which you will receive in Sure Foundation, you will receive 'authority' to rule over your desires for sin, weaknesses to commit sin, gain power to reject worldly attractions, resist temptations and reject Satan in all its forms, forever.

YOU WILL BREAKOUT OF THE CITY GATES AND GO FREE.

You will be set free from your "sinful-self" (sinful desires, which are holding us as captives for sin). Your King, Jesus Christ himself will lead you out from exile." (Micah 2:13) He will strengthen you and keep you firm and safe from the Evil one until the day of the Lord. (1 Cor 1:8 & 2 Thess 3:3) The evil one cannot harm you because, the Lord is faithful. (2 Tim 2:13) God will fill you with his grace and power to remain strong in your inner-self. (2 Cor 12:9)

Well, we have seen that God does not only give protection to his people from the enemies, but helps people to strengthen their inner-being to remain strong to resist the desires to commit sin and fight against temptations. We have understood that the Lord has given power to every one of us who believe, to fight the powers of darkness and remain unharmed by the evil one.

Many references have been quoted in this book in support of this spiritual truth. These are the promises given by God to his children who have been created in the likeness of God

DO YOU DOUBT LORD'S PROMISES?

King Solomon said; "Trust in the Lord with all your heart; do not rely on your own understanding". (Pro 3:5) The ten lepers who believed in Christ's words, acted as he commanded them. In their blind faith they were blessed abundantly. (Luk 17:11-19) ***Doubt is a powerful weapon that Satan uses to keep believers in the darkness as his slaves.*** Because doubt brings fear in our mind. In fear people lose hope and fall in faith. Hence they do not dare to hope in the Lord and fight the evil spirits.

When Jesus came to the disciples walking on water, Peter said; Lord if it is you, order me to come to you walking on the water. Jesus said 'Come.' Peter walked on water to reach Jesus Christ. On seeing strong wind and waves, Peter feared and lost the sight of the command "Come" given by Jesus. Because he lost sight of the command, he relied on his own understanding and strength. Fear gripped him. In fear he did not dare to hope in the Lord. Hence he lost faith in the Lord's word 'Come'. In his fear he lost faith, drowned in water and cried to the Lord 'I am sinking'. Jesus extended his hand, held him and rebuked him saying; "Man of little faith, 'why did you doubt'? (Mat 14:22-32)

This is how we also get disturbed by the attractions of this world and events happening around us. When we lose sight on the promises of the Lord, due to events happening around us, we rely on our own reasoning and strength. In doing so we lose the sight on the word of God and hence we lose the Power in the Promises given to us. Once we are lost for the Power in the promises of the Lord, we fear. And in fear, we fail to hope in the lord. Thus we lose faith in the Lord to save us. Once we lose faith in the Lord and his promises, we drown in our problems and we are lost for our own thoughts. This is the exact situation Satan wants to create among believers. By instilling fear in our mind, Satan keeps the children of God as captives of fear. This fear does not allow us to repose our faith in the Lord and his promises. Because we are already lost in faith, we are not able to depend on his promises to fight against the powers of darkness.

Satan deceives us by sowing doubt in our mind.

Now a big question/doubt that comes to a believer's mind. "Do I have God's power to overcome the power of Evil?" This doubt is not from God. It is from the Devil who always keeps our mind in

doubt to create fear in us, so that we will always have doubt on the power that dwells in God's Words. This doubt will cause the believers to lose faith in God's Words. When we doubt on the power that dwells in God's words and on the authority that God gave to believers over evil spirits, we are already lost in the battle.

When we doubt our faith, we cannot receive anything in our prayer. A person who doubts is like a boat caught in a storm. (James 1:6-8) When we doubt, we do not dare to accept the power given to us in faith to fight against the power of evil. A person who doubts, unable to make up his mind and undecided in all things, he does not expect to receive anything from the Lord. (James 1:8) Jesus said; "Happy (Blessed) are those who have no doubts about in my words and its power. (Mat 11:6).

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO-19

HOW DO HUMAN MIND REACT TO GOD'S WORDS?

In this book we thoroughly analysed why human beings are living in such an awful state. We see all over the world there is anger, hate, vengeance, revenge, fight, terrorism, war, unrest, sufferings, and decease. There is no morality & discipline. People live as their mind pleases and as their body desires. People worship things that are created by the Creator instead of the Creator. People reject truth (Christ) and rebel against it. People choose to live in darkness and sin rather than to live in light of Christ. (Jh 3:19-20) Their mind is obsessed with bodily pleasures & material things of this world.

People of this world do not want to hear the sound doctrine, but follow their own heart desires. They gather more teachers who will tell them what their mind is itching to hear. They turn away from listening to truth but give their attention to legends. (2 Tim 3-4) People have turned away from God. All such things are happening because, human mind rejects God words but rely on their own understanding. (Prov 3:5) Since they refuse to obey scriptures, God has abandoned them to their own evil ways. (Prov 3:6 & Rom 1:23-26) ***This truth on "how human mind rejects God's words to follow what their mind tells" is explained below. Rather to put it simple words; "How human mind rejects God's Words" is explained here.***

1) What God has spoken about purpose of our existence?

God said;

>> "I have created you in my own image". (Gen 1:27)

>> "I have chosen you and set you apart to become my son. Because you have become my son, I want to share my glory with you". (Rom 8:29-30)

>> "Hence you do not belong to yourself, but to me. You have been purchased for a price. (Blood of Jesus) Hence, glorify my Spirit in your body". (1Cor 6:19-21)

What our mind tell us: Our mind does not have reverence for these words of God. Our mind has no thirst to know the spiritual truths about our own body. We are not interested to know; "what God has spoken about our body, soul and spirit"? We do not care about the purpose of our existence on earth or what God wants to do with us and how we can glorify God's Spirit in our life? Because we are lost

in the attractions of world, we are immersed in the desires for pleasures and material things of this world.

Our mind tells us that: "Our life is very short on this planet and hence we have to enjoy every pleasure this world offers, whether it is from God or Evil"? Also, our mind has no botheration to know, 'whether our life pleases our God or not'? Our mind says that; there is nothing we can look forward in this life such as; spiritual gifts, to be an instrument in God's hand for salvation of the world, glorifying God's Spirit in our body, sharing God' glory in earthly life, and life after death-Salvation". Our mind is obsessed with attractions & pleasures of this world. Hence it leads us to live for enjoying fun and sinful-pleasures. Thus our mind rejects God's words to live in sin.

2) What God has spoken about the power he gave us?

God said:

>> "I make a covenant with you; I give my power and my teaching to be yours forever. From now on you are to obey me and teach your children and descendants to obey me for all time". (Is 59:21)

>> "I give you authority over nations and kingdoms to uproot and pull down, to destroy and overthrow, and to build and to plant". (Jer 1:8-9)

>> "Today I am giving you the strength to resist them (evil power); you will become a fortified city, an iron pillar, and a bronze wall. The evil power will not defeat you for I will be with you. (Jer 1:18-19)

What our mind tells us: *Our mind has no reverence to God's promises and his teachings. We do not take God's power and his teaching seriously. Neither do we teach our children about them. Also, our children do not take Scriptures seriously. Because our mind does not take teachings of Scriptures seriously, we are not able to accept the truth that; "God has given power to us and that we can use this power to fight the evil to live righteous life". **Rather, our mind is filled with doubts and fear.** These doubts and fear does not allow us to have faith and dare to hope in the Lord to fight the evil spirits which have enslaved us with invisible chains. Because we are bound in invisible chains (Wis 17:17) we have become refugee and captive for sin. This is the reason why we are not able to renounce sin, but we commit sin repeatedly and endlessly.*

3) What God has spoken about doing his ministry?

God said;

>> "I have chosen you to be with me. I will send you to preach and you will have authority to drive out demons."(Mk 3:15)

>> "Believers will be given power to perform miracles and they will drive out demons in my name."(Mark16:17)

>> Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven (Mat 18:18)

>> "I have given you authority to walk on snakes and scorpions and to overcome the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you". (Luk 10:19)

Yes, we are given power to bind evil spirits and to cast them out.

What our mind tells us: *People's mind does not believe in these promises because of their intelligence and advancement in science. They fall in grace to believe in the Scriptures because they have become materialistic. They do not devote time for reading Scriptures. We receive faith by reading/ hearing word of God. (Rom10:14-15) The busy schedule of this world and its attractions do not allow us to read word of God. Even if someone devote time to read scriptures, temptations and entertainments of this world removes the words that they read along with its richness.(Col3:16) Further, people are of the belief that spiritual powers are practiced only by Consecrated priests and it does not fit in to life of lay people living in modern world. People do not give importance to theses promises and hence they are not able to repose faith in the promises for spiritual power.*

Further whatever little faith people have, is not strong or firm. *Because, their mind is filled with doubts on the power in the word of God. Also their mind have doubts that; "whether God can do such wonders through them". Because they doubt, they fear to practice what is written in Scriptures. Yes, people's faith is made weak by fear and ignorance. (Wis17:12) When God has given man authority over evil spirits (Mk 16:17) people's mind always looks for authority to rule over fellow beings on earth. They crave for gaining such power, status and authority so that they can treat their fellow brothers and sisters as slaves and enemies. For the sake of gaining such authority and power, people do evil things and displease God in their actions.*

4) What God has spoken about healing through his words?

God said:

>>"No ointment or medicine healed them. They were restored to health by your Word O Lord, which heals humanity."(Wis 16:12)

>> "It is your Word that maintains those who put trust in you". (Wis 16:26)

>>"The power of wisdom reaches everywhere and sets everything in useful order (Wis 8:1) (It means God's words will reach every part of our body and heal our sickness)

>> "If you remain in me and my words remain in you, then you ask any thing in my name, it will be given to you. (Jh 15:7)

>>"Do not rely on your own understanding. Trust in the Lord with all your heart." (Pro 3:5)

>>"If you believe you will see the Glory of the Lord. (Jh 11:40)
(Saying these words, Jesus rose Lazarus to life from death)

What our mind tells us: *Our mind is very intelligent. It has gained knowledge through worldly wisdom. Hence our mind rejects God, his words and power of God to heal us, to solve our problems and to save us in distress. We try to solve all our problems through our intelligence and efforts. We look for healing of disease only through medical science. Our mind deceives us to trust in God's promises. Hence, our mind fails to believe that God can work wonders to heal our sickness & solve problem which are beyond our reach.*

Because our intelligence does not allow us to repose trust in God to heal our decease through his words and solve our problems which are beyond our control, we lose blessings. Such awful thing has happened because, our worldly wisdom and intelligence does not allow us to surrender our mind to God so that his power can work in us to heal us, to deliver us and solve our problems.

Yes, our mind wants to solve all our problems through our intelligence. *For sickness which does not get healed through medicine, we look for solutions in superstitious beliefs such as; horoscope, astrology, zodiac signs, acupuncture, reiki healing and pranic healing. And for problems which are beyond our capability and intelligence to solve, we try to solve it by indulging in forbidden spiritual practices such as witchcraft, black magic, consulting spirits of the dead, and medium. All these practices are against the teachings of Scriptures. Yes, people do not trust in God to solve their problems. But they do all such things that evoke God's anger.*

5) What God has spoken about keeping our body holy?

God said:

> I am the Lord your God, and you must keep yourself holy, because; I am holy. (Lev 11:44)

>> I am the Lord who brought you out of Egypt, so that I could be your God. You must be holy, because; I am holy. (Lev 11:45)

>>> Be holy, because, I, the Lord your God, am holy. (Liv 19:2)

>>>> Be holy in all you do, just as God who called you is holy. The Scriptures says;" Be holy because, I am holy" (1 Pet 1:15)

>>>>> God wants that we should remain pure and holy, and glorify God's Spirit in our body. (1 Cor 6:19-20)

What our mind tells us: *The present world is so materialistic that whatever man does, his mind looks for material gain. So, if you tell a person that; "You are God's Child, you must not defile yourself by sinning and you should remain holy as your Heavenly Father is Holy", he will immediately ask; "what will I gain in this world, by remaining holy"? Specifically a man or a woman who sells his/her body for money, may be; by indulging in prostitution, or by acting in pornography movies, or by trafficking human beings for flesh trade, he/she would argue that; if he indulges in all kinds of evil things he/she would gain material things and pleasures of the world. He/she would justify that by living a holy life he/she would gain nothing. People have no reverence to the Word of God or living a holy life. For such people Scriptures means nothing.*

For a man who is materialistic, life means; "to possess wealth, power and pleasures of the world by any means", even if it is through unlawful means. *Because, human mind says that; 'We live only once. Hence we must possess everything and enjoy all pleasures'. People of this world are not interested in spiritual life or spiritual needs. They do not have fear of God. They do not have reverence for Word of God and eternal life. Human mind desires to possess more and more wealth and they do all evil to gain them. Hence they live as slaves of sins. Human mind justifies all their sins saying that; "it is the way of life. Everyone on earth are living life in this manner. I am not an exception and the society also accepts such way of life".*

Further, human mind justifies sexual sins and satisfies itself by in the following manner:

Self-abuse (Masturbation): *Human mind says that; 'masturbation is only a biological need of our body and God understands our body's requirements, hence there is no sin in it'.*

Sex outside marriage: *Human mind says that men are born to love and women are meant to be loved. So to enjoy sex with any person of opposite sex is fair and can be practiced with any one with their consent. Human mind satisfies itself saying that; after all we live for few days, so let us enjoy all the pleasures of the world before we die.*

Spouse swapping and Orgy: *Human mind justifies that it is a culture and a way of enjoying life in modern and advanced society least realising that wrath of God will come upon them.*

God said; "Avoid immorality. Any other sin that man commits does not affect his body; but a man who is guilty of sexual immorality sins against his own body. Don't you know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who lives in you? Who was given to you by God? You do not belong to yourself; but to God. He bought you for a price. (Blood of Jesus Christ) Use your body for God's glory." (1 Cor 18-20)

God wants that human beings should remain holy in their whole being, (i.e., in body, soul & spirit) and glorify God Spirit. But human mind refuses to accept this spiritual truth. Our mind finds many ways and excuses to abuse our body sexually and physically to enjoy all kind of sinful pleasures and justifies such behaviour. Yes, we justify our sins because our mind which is living in darkness do not perceive the light of Christ shining on us. (Eph 5:14) Though the light of Christ has come it to the world human beings prefer to live in darkness because their deeds are evil. (Jh 3:18-20)

6. What God has spoken about marriage?

God said;

"It is not good for the man to be alone. I will make a suitable companion to help him". (Gen 2:18) Since man needs a companion, God created female, blessed male and female. He said to them; "have many children, so that your descendants will live all over the world and bring it under their control." (Gen 1:27-28) That is why a man leaves his father and mother and is united with his wife and they become one." (Gen 2:24) God blessed the conjugal relation between man & woman, so that, they will produce many children, glorify God in their marital relation and by being united to gather till they die. In God's plan, Conjugal relation between married couple is meant for pro-creation and sharing true love between husband and wife. Thus God is glorified by married couples in their life.

What human mind says? Human mind says is:

>> Love can be shared with any person irrespective of what sex the other person may be.

>> And there is no requirement for solemnising the union of man & women through the sacrament of marriage. Hence living-in relation is acceptable to man. Physical relation is a matter of convenience.

>> So long a man or a women loves Christ and shares love with another person irrespective of which sex the other person is, such love and sexual relation between those two persons of same sex is acceptable in the eyes God. This is called Gay and Lesbian relation.

It is unfortunate that human mind has forgotten that; "God destroyed the cities 'Sodom' and 'Gomorrhah' by burning sulphur

because people of these cities indulged in Gay and Lesbian relations which was forbidden by God". Yes, God very strictly warned human beings that; "they should not to indulge in this sinful relation". Further God has cautioned that; "those who indulge in this forbidden relation will not enter in to Kingdom of God." (1 Cor 6: 9-10)

But the Satan deceives people's mind. He lures them to indulge in this forbidden relation so that he can destroy their souls. Because, those who enjoy the pleasures of forbidden sexual relations, if they die without repenting for this mortal sin, they will lose eternal life promised by Christ. This is how our mind deceives us to live in sin thereby we lose all blessing which are reserved for us.

7) What God has spoken about fear?

God said:

>> "I have called you by name; you are mine. When you pass through rivers, I will be with you. The troubles of this world will not overwhelm you. When you pass through fire, you will not be burnt. Do not be terrified, do not be afraid, for I am your God. I am with you, because, you are precious to me. (Is 43:1-5)

>> "Do not fear, I am with you; I am you God let nothing terrify you. I will make you strong and I will help you". (Is 41:10)

>> "I will lead my blind people through the roads that they have never travelled and turn their darkness into light, and make their rough country road smooth before them. (Is 42:16) (These are the roads in spiritual life in which we receive spiritual powers and use it against evil spirits to set ourselves free power of sin.)

What our mind tells us: Our mind tells us that, "there is nothing to look forward in spiritual life". Because, "our mind is always concerned with worldly things". Hence we live opposite to what Jesus says. He said; "Be concerned with kingdom of God; rest all will be added unto you." (Mat 6:33) Because we are concerned only about worldly things, we are spiritually very weak. Such mind-set leads us in sinful ways. Because we live in sin, we are always filled with fear. Sin and Fear go to gather hand-in-hand. Fear does not allow us to believe in spiritual life or spiritual gifts or spiritual powers which God has promised. Fear does not allow man to progress in spiritual life. Fear rules human beings. Hence, people continue to grope in darkness though light of Christ is shining on them. (Eph 5:14)

People who live in sin and fear have no reverence about spiritual life or spiritual gifts and spiritual powers. Because they love to live in sin, their mind does perceive the spiritual powers that God

has promised to believers. Because they do not believe in the spiritual powers, they do not receive those spiritual powers. Hence, they cannot use these spiritual powers against the powers of darkness to experience freedom from sin. So they continue to live as slaves for ruling spirits of the universe. (Gal 4:3) That's why God said; "the world is under the power of sin". (Gal 3:22) Our mind deceives us to receive spiritual powers and to gain real freedom from our sinful-self, using them. (Col 2:11)

8) What God has spoken about living with his words?

God said;

"Pay attention to what I say to my son! Listen to my words. Never let them get away from you. Remember them and keep them in your heart. They will give life and health to those who understand them" (Pro 4:20-21). Here God clearly says that his words will give life and healing in our mind, body and soul.

What our mind tells us: *Our mind tells us that; 'we should get enriched in worldly wisdom & knowledge so that we earn wealth to live a good and healthy life. Hence, people are always concerned with worldly things. Our mind gives great importance to worldly wisdom and believes that, this information only will give life, prosperity and health. We have no time or desire to read God's words and to retain them in mind to harvest its blessing. Our mind directs us to find life in the worldly entertainments. Also it directs us to find health through medical science or through certain healing which are against scriptures such as; acupuncture, reiki healing or pranic healing, zodiac signs, & astrology. Our mind do not allow us to believe that we receive life and healing through God's words as we read below:*

Jesus said; *"What brings life is God's Spirit; Man's power is of no use at all. The words I have spoken bring God's life-giving Spirit into you." (Jh 6:63) Yes, words of Jesus brings God's life-giving Spirit in to our body and makes him to live; because Jesus said; "Man does not live by bread alone but by every word spoken by God."(Mat 4:4)*

Further, whenever Jesus performed miracle, *he made people to understand that his words brings life in human body. Yes, whenever Jesus performed miracle, he spoke "Living words". His life-giving words healed the sick, lame, deaf, blind and raised dead back to life.*

In the book Ezekiel we read that; God told the Prophet to prophesy 'Word of the Lord' to the dry bones. When Prophet Ezekiel prophesied God's words to those dry bones, they all came to life. (Ezk136: 1-14)

The Scriptures say that; we receive healing through the Word of God. It is true that God gave wisdom to man to identify the medicines/herbs on earth which can be used to cure sickness. Also, God placed doctors to administer these medicines on sick people. (Sir 38:4-8). One should be wise enough to understand that doctors only administer medicine on the sick people. On consuming it, the medicine works in a sick person only when God sends his Spirit of healing upon the sick person.

In other words, the doctor administer medicine on patients. But, it is the Lord who heals the sick person. Yes, healing comes from the Lord, because he said that; "I am the Lord who heals you" (Ex 15:26) And, Jesus said; "without me you can do nothing". (Jh 15:5). Yes, without God's intervention no medicine will work on patients and no healing will take place on earth. We should also be wise enough to understand that the medicine prescribed by doctors can heal only sickness in body. *The medicines available to man on earth do not heal a broken heart, or a wounded mind, or bruised spirits, and inner hurts in our soul. The only medicine available to heal our broken heart, wounded mind, bruised spirits, and sickness in our soul is the Life-Giving Spirit of Jesus Christ which we receive through his Living Words.*

That's why King Solomon said: "No medicine or ointment healed them. They were restored to health by your Word, O Lord which heals all humanity. (Wis 16:12) We also read that King David said; "He sent forth his word and restored them to health"(Ps 107:20) Yes, Jesus sent forth his word and healed the Centurion's servant who was lying sick at his home.(Luk 7:1-10) Intelligent mind in man which is filled with worldly knowledge & worldly wisdom refuses to accept these spiritual truths.

9) What God has spoken about forgetting the past events?

God said;

"Do not cling to the events of the past or dwell on what happened long ago. Watch for new things that I am going to do. It is happening already-you can see it now. I will make roads through wilderness and give you streams of water there."(Is 43:18) Here, God clearly said; we should not live in dejection/d depression by remembering our past bad incidents and spoil our present by living in despair and hopelessness which is against God's will for us. God said; "Be joyful always, pray at all time, give thanks in all circumstances, for this is what God's will is for you in Christ Jesus". (1 Thes 5:16-18)

What our mind tells us: *Our mind says; "Do not to forget bad incidents/events that happened in the past". Particularly, those events which have wounded our feelings, our mind and our soul. Our mind wants to retain and ponder over every bad incident which disturbs our peace and health. People ponder over past bad incidents every day and spoil their own peace and peace in the family. Such attitude does not allow us to forgive our offenders there-by, we live against the teachings of Christ: "Forgive one another as I have forgiven you."(Col 3:13).*

Because we ponder over those bad moments of our past life, *we always carry vengeance in our heart, which drives us to take revenge. This attitude destroys the atmosphere around us. It greatly affects our relations with our family members, relatives and in the society. This in turn affects our health very badly. People get in to serious health complications because they cannot forgive their offenders for past incidents and forget them. In fact, our past bad memories destroy our peace in the present life, affects our good health and destroys our future. Our future gets affected because, we live with revenge feeling and our decisions are not based on love. But God offers to give us peace and change our present and restore our future for our own good through the promise given to us through Prophet Isaiah in Is 43:18. (Quoted in above para)*

10) What God has spoken on meditating his Words?

God said;

"Devote all your time studying the Lord's commandments and thinking about them. He will give you insight and wisdom that you are looking for."(Sir 6:37). God wants man to become wise by understanding the truths in Scriptures and become very strong in his inner-self by transforming himself with help of Scriptures to reject sin in all its forms. Such achievement can be made only by reading and meditating on the Word of God in all our free time.

What our mind tell us: *Our mind do not show any interest to devote time for reading Scriptures or to meditate on them. Because, it feels that man does not profit anything by reading Scriptures. Our mind directs us to spend all leisure time in internet, chatting on mobile phone, reading magazines & novels, gossiping and to engage in entertainments. If our mind is bored with all these entertainments, then it keeps pondering over all past unpleasant events that will only make us live in sorrow and depression, which will perfectly destroy our present and future as we understood from Para-10 above. Yes, we do not trust in the Lord's words, hence we are deceived by our*

mind. (Prov 3:5) This happens because the thief, the Satan keep us away from reading scriptures because, he knows that if we read scriptures and meditate on it, we will gain Wisdom & spiritual powers. Hence we will become wise and reject Satan and he cannot keep children of God as slaves for sin.

11) What God spoke on worshipping him before sunrise?

God said;

“Wisdom shines bright and never grows dim; those who love her and look for her can easily find her. She is quick to reveal herself to anyone who desires her. Get up early in the morning to find her and you will have no problem”. (Wis 6:12-21) God said; if you worship me early in the morning between 3 and 6 A M, read my words, I will bless you with heavenly Wisdom. Further, he gives a promise to those who search for Wisdom in early morning that; “ the Spirit of Wisdom will make him firm in God’s words, which will give him power to rule over his weakness & gain freedom from his sinful-self”.

Yes, his promise says; *“The desire for Wisdom can prepare you to rule a kingdom.* So then, you who rule the nations, if you value your throne (your body) and symbols of authority (anointment given to you), honour Wisdom (obey word of God) so that you may rule forever (can rule over your sinful-self). (Wis 6:12-21). Jesus said; “Search for the kingdom of God above all things; rest all will be added unto you” (freedom from sin will be given to you) (Mat 6:33) Also we read in the Gospel of Mark; “When the apostles were struggling at the sea in middle of the night, Jesus came to them early in the morning between 3 and 6 AM, walking on water and saved them from their struggle. (Mk 6:44-52)

***The meaning of above para is;** Jesus is looking for those struggling people who are searching for him in the early morning to fill them with his presence, peace and power & to deliver them from their problems and give a new life. You will receive power to walk on your problems and your sinful desires & weaknesses which are making you to fall in sin repeatedly.*

What our mind tell us: *Our mind is always concerned with the fun, pleasures and comforts of this world. Our mind says that; we live for a short period. So, we should enjoy all entertainments available late night through all available sources and also enjoy our early morning pleasure full sleep. After all, there is nothing big to look forward in life. Our mind says; “My parents and grandparents got up early in the early morning to worship the Lord, but they did not achieve*

anything big". This attitude binds us to human wisdom which does not allow us to worship the Lord in Truth and Spirit (Jh 4:24) in the early morning and to harvest the blessings that God has reserved for Children those who sacrifice their early morning sleep to worship him.

Yes, God blesses people who seek his face in early morning with a special gift; 'A gift of firmness in the Word of God' which makes him as wall of bronze against the evil spirits there-by he gains self-control over his sinful-self. (Our weaknesses/desires to commit sin) This gift "self-control" will not allow him to fall prey for temptations & hence he will receive freedom from sin. He will be transformed with-in himself lie a diamond & a rock (Ezkl 3:8-9) which will give him authority over evil spirits which are luring him to commit sin repeatedly. Thus he receives freedom what God has promised saying; "Freedom is what we have in Christ; Christ has set us free! Stand then as free people and do not allow your freedom to make you slaves again. (Gal 5:1)

If we do not seek the Lord in the early morning before sunrise then, we are at loss for the freedom within ourselves to enjoy the peace, joy and love of the Lord and to celebrate life every day in God's presence. This is what our parents and grandparents gained by worshiping God in the early morning. They received this spiritual blessing which is not tangible. They lived in a close relation with our Lord and continued to live in freedom from sin. But we children of modern age, we look for material blessings in everything we do and lose spiritual blessings in our ignorance. Dear believer, do you also want to enjoy this freedom? Then Obey the Word of God written in Wisdom 6:12-21 and celebrate life every day.

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
It is Time for Reflection.

QUESTION NO-20

WHAT IS GOD'S FINAL CALL TO GIVE UP SIN?

"DO NOT ALLOW YOUR MIND TO DECIEVE YOU!"

Dear believer, our mind is a great barrier in spiritual life because; mind perceives what the eyes sees. Our mind reasons out or draws inference from what our eyes sees. Hence our mind trust what it sees. Yes, our mind trust the material world. But in spiritual life we go by faith. We proceed in to an unknown with faith, believing that the unknown exists, and hence, we rely on unseen things. "We fix our attention not on things that are seen, but things that are un-seen". (2 Cor 4:18) Since our mind is intelligent and reasons out every actions we are not able to surrender ourselves before God. Hence we are not able to believe in unseen spiritual truths. Our mind refuses to trust in scriptures. Hence we are deceived by our mind for the blessings that God offers in faith. *But the Word of the Lord says; "Do not rely on your own understanding; trust in the Lord. (Prov 3:5)*

"DO NOT DISOBEY THE WORD AND LOSE BLESSINGS"

Since we are not able to humble before God, we do not receive grace to obey his Words. If we do not obey his Words we lose the blessings that are promised in obedience. (Duet 28:1-13) Hence we lose spiritual gifts that are promised. Jesus said; "Blessed are the one who hear the word and obey it."(Luk 11:28) Without spiritual gifts we will live in flesh & blood. And, in flesh & blood we cannot have self-control over our sinful-self & on attractions of this world, as Jesus said; "our flesh is weak but Spirit is willing."(Mat 26:41) Hence, we are bound to fall for our sinful weaknesses and evil desires. Thus we lose all the blessing in disobedience.

"DO NOT DOUBT JESUS CHRIST" (Mat 11:8)

Those who live by God's Spirit, live inheriting all spiritual blessings that are promise for God's children. Dear believers, our mind is our biggest barrier to come closer to God. Our mind is filled with worldly knowledge and understanding. Hence it always has doubts. It doubts even our faith in Christ. *When we doubt our faith we commit sin. (Rom 14:23)* Yes, when we doubt we are like St Peter who sank in the sea because he doubted his faith. (Mat 14:28-32) When we doubt we displease God like how St Thomas doubted

*the resurrection of Jesus Christ. (Jh 20:24-29) But Jesus said; "believers will be given power to perform miracles; they will drive demons in my name; they will speak strange languages; if they pick up snakes or drink any poison, they will not be harmed; they will place hands on sick people, who will be healed. (Mat 16:17-18) Jesus said; "If you believe you will see Glory of God."(Jh 11:40) Through these promises Jesus warns us not to rely on understanding of mind but to trust in the Lord. **That's why Jesus said; "Blessed are those who have no doubts about me."**(Mat 11:8)*

HUMBLE YOURSELF BEFORE THE LORD AND ACCEPT HIS WORDS FOR YOURSELF

People who humbled before God by accepting his word were raised to high status by God. Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Daniel and Elijah are some who humbled before God, accepted his words and obeyed him. They were great men of God of all time. Unless we accept God's call, accept his word and obey them, we will live on earth in flesh & blood. There will be no real life in us. Because Jesus said; "What gives life is God's Spirit; man's power is no use at all. The Words I have spoken to you brings God's life-giving Spirit into you". (Jh 6:63) If we do not have this Spirit and its fruits, (Gal 5:22) we cannot fight our weaknesses that are causing us to yield for sin. Hence, we will not be able to fight evil spirits which are constantly fighting against us, (Eph 6:12) to keep us as slaves of sin.

The best example for humbleness and obedience is Mother Mary. When angel Gabriel gave the message about birth of Christ, She humbled herself and said; "I am the Lord's servant. Let it happen to me according to Lord's will."(Luk 1:26-37) Mother Mary displayed great humbleness & obedience and hence she was blessed. She became the Mother of God.

GIVE UP YOUR STUBBIORNESS TO RECEIVE THE PROMISED BLESSINGS.

We become stubborn in mind and hard in our heart to obey the Lord, because our flesh fights against the Spirit as St Peter said; "Our flesh is at war against the soul". (1 Pet 2:11) This happens because; "the desires of the flesh are against the desires of the Spirit. They both are enemies". (Gal 5:16-17) Since our body is influenced by mind to enjoy the comforts & pleasures of the world, we become stubborn in mind and hard in heart to obey God. But God calls us to give up our stubbornness. He will help us to bring a transformation

with in us by power of the Spirit. (Rom 12:1-2) If our stubborn mind becomes obedient mind and if our hardened heart becomes heart of flesh, (Ezkl 11:19 & 36:36) then we will receive all blessings and spiritual gifts as promised to fight against the evil powers.

Dear believers, are you willing to accept voice of the Lord and obey his Words? You will appreciate that, if there is a commotion in a Courtroom, to bring orderliness, the Judge rules with a hammer over everyone, and commands; 'Order! Order! Order!' In similar manner when our life is in a mess, when things are grossly going wrong, when there is commotion in our life, God also commands us three times with a hammer. (Jer 23:29)He said:

"If you hear God's voice today, do not be stubborn" (Heb 3:7)

"If you hear God's voice today, do not be stubborn" (Heb 3:15)

"If you hear God's voice today, do not be stubborn" (Heb 4:7)

Let us give you our stubbornness and obey the Lord!

ALLOW GOD TO TRANSFORM YOU SO THAT YOU CAN REJECT SIN IN ALL ITS FORMS

If you are willing to make a decision right now to obey his Words, God will be with you in your decision. Because this decision comes from the Lord. (Duet 1:17) In Proverbs-Chap 2 to 4, God speaks on how Word of God gives protection from sin & evil to those who live by Wisdom. Please read these chapters, meditate upon it. Ask God to give you grace to trust his words and obey his words.

If you are serious and sincere in your heart, with a firm decision to give up your worldly ways and worship God in the early morning between 3 and 6 AM, you will experience a new beginning. God will give you peace of mind. He will open ways to solve problems, which you think that it cannot be solved. Further he will fill you with Spirit of Wisdom which will transform you inwardly by a complete change of mind. Then you will be able to know the will of God, what is good and pleasing to him and is perfect. (Rom 12:2)

This inward transformation will make you strong in your inner-self. Such inward transformation will give "Power and Grace" to gain self-control over all your feelings, weaknesses and desires which are making you to fall in sin repeatedly. Yes, this transformation will build power within yourself. You will become as firm as a rock and as hard as a diamond (Ezkl 3:8-9) against all weaknesses & desires. They cannot make you to commit sin

repeatedly. **You will be like a wall of bronze and will be able to resist temptations & reject sin in all its forms.**

God's Warning to honour his words for your protection. "If you listen to me, you will know what is right, just and fair. You will know what you should do. You will become wise and your knowledge will give you pleasure. Your insight and understanding will protect you and prevent you from doing wrong things. They will keep you away from people who stir up trouble by what they say, men who have abandoned righteous life to live in the darkness and sin, men who find pleasure in doing wrong, and who enjoy senseless evil; unreliable men who cannot be trusted. You will be able to resist any immoral women who tries to seduce you with her smooth words." (Prov 2:9-16)

ALLOW THE HOLY SPIRIT TO TAKE CONTROLE OVER YOU:

If you allow the Holy Spirit to take control over every area of your life, (Rev 3:20) then the Spirit of Wisdom will give power & inner strength to resist temptations and reject sin. You will become a new being in your body, mind and in your soul. You will be a changed person because, Holy Spirit will give you a new life. (Zephaniah 3:17).The Holy Spirit will take complete control over you and give freedom from all your weaknesses which the Satan is using as a powerful weapon against you to make you to fall in sin repeatedly so that he can hold you as a slave of sin and captive of crime. (Is 50:1)

But God's promises never fails for a person who is repentant and humble in his heart. He will never reject a humble and repentant heart.(Ps 51:17).He will accept you as you are, and give you the status as his son, in the manner how the prodigal son was accepted by his father when he repented for his sins. (Luk 5:10-30) God will restore everything that you lost due to sin. (Joel 2:12-26) Because Jesus said "I came to seek and save the sinners" '(Luk 19:10).Yes, Jesus Christ came to set the captives free. (Is 61:1).

GOD'S MARK OF OWNERSHIP ON YOU WILL GIVE YOU COMPLETE FREEDOM FROM SIN.

The Holy Spirit is the mark of God's ownership on you which is a guarantee that a day will come when God will set you free from all weaknesses to commit sin."(Eph 4:30) This freedom is what God promised when he called you. (Gal 5:1) Yes, God promised to give freedom from sins in your obedience. "The Holy Spirit is the

guarantee that you shall receive what God has promised his people & this assures us that God will give complete freedom (from sin) to those who are his, (Eph 1:14) because, blessings is what God promised when he called you.(1 Pet 3:9)

The message given here is very clear. If you show wholehearted desire to know more about Wisdom by worshipping God before sunrise and honour God by obeying his Words, then God will give you power to rule over your weaknesses, sinful desires and gain power to reject worldly attractions which makes you to commit sin repeatedly. Also God will give you power over all the external evil forces, sinful attractions of the world which lures you to commit sin. (Jer 15:19-21)

Ask yourself how much do you desire to learn about God's words? The more you read Scriptures before sunrise, accept God's words in faith and obey them, more is the power that you will gain to reject the evil within you and to resist the external evil power that lures you to commit sin.

You will receive power over your sinful-self and gain courage to say no to sin. Yes believers, honour Wisdom above everything in life, so that you will continue to rule over powers of darkness forever. (Wis 6:20-21)

Before
we Proceed
to next Question
it is Time for Reflection

QUESTION NO-21

CAN WE RULE OVER SIN LIKE A KING?

Dear believers in Christ, Blessing is what God Promised when he called us. (1Pet 3:9) He called us to possess full measure of blessing of Christ. (Rom 15:29) Out of fullness of his grace God has blessed us all, giving us one blessing after another.(Jh 1:16) In union with Christ he has blessed us by giving us every spiritual blessings in heavenly world. (Eph 1:3)

It is to this blessings Jesus has called us and said; I have given you authority to walk on snakes (your weaknesses & sinful desires) and scorpions (worldly sinful attractions) and overcome the power of the enemy. And nothing will harm you.” (Luk 10:19) Because Jesus promised to give us authority to walk on our desires & weaknesses and sinful attractions, we can rule over our sins like kings, if we obey his Words and honour Wisdom.

To those people who honour Wisdom above everything in life, God gives the following promises which they can use as powerful weapons against Satan and rule over him like king.

>> *Today I give you authority over nations and kingdom, (kingdom of Satan) to uproot and to pull down, to destroy and to overthrow, to build and plant”(Jer 1:10).* It is an open offer. If we accept this authority, God will be there in your decision to bless you with all assistance, help and guidance to overcome evil.

>> *“I will make you like a solid bronze wall as far as they (your weaknesses & desires for sin) are concerned. They will fight against you, but they will not defeat you. I will be with you to protect you and keep you safe. I will rescue you from the power of the wicked and violent men. I the LORD has spoken”* (Jer 15:19-21) God promises to protect us from our desires, weaknesses and worldly attractions which are constantly fighting against us to keep us as captives and refugees. (Ezkl 12:11-12)

>> *“The Righteous will rule over nations (sin) and people. The Lord will be their king forever.* (Wis 3:8) To righteous people who obey word of God, he promises power to rule over the Satan. Then, who is righteous in the eyes of God? To know and understand who is

righteous, believers are advised to read Ezkl 18:5–9, Duet 10:12–22, Is 58:1–12, Eph 5:1–20 and Ps 15:1–5.

>> *"I will protect those who are righteous and allow them to rule like kings and give them honour forever"* (Job 36:7) God promises to give us power like a King to rule over your sins.

>> *Jesus said; "If we continue to endure with me , you shall also rule with Him"* (2 Tim: 12) (the meaning is; in all trials and difficulties we should obey Christ and do not abandon him, and meditate on his words , we will experience the power to rule over sin) Yes, we can rule over all our weaknesses, sinful desires, and evil forces of this world that are causing us to fall in sin repeatedly to keep us as slaves of sin to destroy our soul.

>> *Further Jesus God said; "You have stayed with me all through my trials, and just as my father has given me the right to rule, so I will give the same right"* (Luk 22:28–29) Jesus gives us a message that he was fault less and hence kept Satan at his feet and ruled over all its powers. He promises to give us he same power to rule over the Satan if we continue to remain faithful to him in all trials without giving up faith.

>> *"God made man little lower than the angels and has crowned him with glory and honour. God made him to rule over all things (including the powers of the evil forces). The scriptures says that God made man "rule over all things" (Including evil powers) We do not however, see man ruling over powers of darkness.(Heb 2:7-8) Because, we have become captives of sin and prisoners of darkness than to walk in the light of the Lord and rule over the powers of darkness.*

LORD'S FINAL CALL AND A PROMISE FOR BLESSING

"May God Bless everyone who gives attention to these teachings. Whoever takes them to heart will become wise. Whoever lives by them will be strong for any occasion, because they will be walking in the Light of the Lord" (Sir 50:28-29)

***"Are you willing to walk in the light of the Lord"?
A big debatable Question! Isn't it?***

Speak to your God about this!

QUESTION NO: 22

WHY GOD IN HIS WISDOM PERMITTED MAN TO FALL IN SIN?

God who has Wisdom & Knowledge about whole creation also knows the plan he has for mankind. He oversees his 'eternal plan' for whole creation which comprises of living beings in the heavenly world and human beings on earth. God who created human beings in his own image wanted that man should be holy in everything he does. (Lev 19:2 & 1Pet 1:15-16) Yet, God permitted man to fall in sin. Because, "God wanted to demonstrate his supremacy over all creations" as we read in Sirach 42:15-25 & 43:1-33. To understand this spiritual truth we should know what is "God's eternal plan"?

This is what the Scriptures says about God's 'eternal plan':

"All things are done according to God's plan & will. God chose us to be his own people in union with Jesus Christ because of his own purpose based on what he had decided from the very beginning". (Eph 1:11)

Hence, "Even before the world was created, God had already chosen us to be his through our union with Jesus Christ, so that, we would be holy and without fault before him. (Eph 1:4)

Because of his love for mankind "God had already decided that through Jesus Christ he would make us his sons"- this was his pleasure and purpose. (Eph 1:5)

In all his Wisdom and insight God did what he had purposed and made known his secret plan he had already decided to complete by means of Christ. This "eternal-plan" which God will complete when time is right, is to bring all creations to gather, everything in heaven and on earth, with Christ as head".(Eph 1:9-10)

'God's Eternal Plan' gives us the following discernment:

>> In his eternal plan, God wanted to make us 'his sons' through Jesus Christ. (Ps 2:7, Prov 4:20, Jer 31:20 & Heb 12:5-6)

>> Unless God has made man in his image, we cannot become his Sons. Hence God made us in his own likeness. (Gen 1:27)

>> Since man was made in God's likeness, God also shares his knowledge, understanding and authority with man. (Is 11:2, Prov 2:6, Is 59:21, Luk 10:19 MK 16:16-18 & Jh 20:21-23)

>> Since man had the knowledge, understanding and reasoning power, he would have raised against God out of pride and asked him; "Why I should worship you, since I am made in the same likeness and share the same knowledge & understanding as you are?" But, God did not want man should become a rival to him out of pride. (Ex 34:14 & Nahum 1:2)

>> If man had to raise against God in pride as his rival, mankind would have been condemned and thrown in hell by God in the manner how one third of angels who raised against God out of pride were condemned for ever and thrown in hell. (Rev 12:9)

>> Out of his great love, God did not want that mankind should be condemned to hell because of pride. But, he wanted to gather mankind as his children/ sons. Hence he permitted man to fall in sin so that he would live with guilt and humbleness. Hence man will always be subjected to God's will, (Mat 6:10) and depend on his love & mercy for good living (Sir 2:18 & 2 Esdras 2:31)

>> Hence in the beginning, in creation, as per his eternal-plan, God had already decided that mankind would fall in sin, remain as objects of his mercy. (Rom 9:23)

>> **From the above discernment we clearly understand that;** "even before creation, God in his eternal plan had already willed that mankind would fall in sin. And he willed that, mankind will be redeemed from bondage of sin (Acts 4:12) through the sacrificial death of his Son - Jesus Christ, so that God the Father would gather them as his sons. (Eph 1:4-5 & Jh 3:16)

>>> **From the above discernment we can understand that God** who created man in his own image, in his Wisdom permitted him to fall in sin. So that, man will live in humbleness depend on God's love and mercy, and will not rebel against God in pride and lose the promised eternal life like the fallen angels. (Jh 11:25) God used sin as his instrument (Jer 51:20-23) to humble man and to show his love and mercy for mankind.

BASED ON THE ABOVE DISCERNMENT NOW WE WILL TRY AND UNDERSTAND THE ANSWER FOR THE FOLLOWING QUESTION.

"If God created man in his own image and called him as his son; "Why did God permit man to fall in sin?"

GOD PERMITTED MAN TO FALL IN SIN BECAUSE:

Man was created in the image of God. (Gen 1:27) And God had given him wisdom and knowledge above all things he created. Also, God also gave man authority to rule all creations. (Gen 1:28 Is 59:21, Luk 10:19 MK 16:16-18 & Jh 20:21-23) Further, God gave his message to man. Since man had the same wisdom, knowledge and understanding as God himself has, God called man as gods. (Ps 82:6 & Jh 10:34-35)

Because God gave wisdom, knowledge, understanding and his message to man, God did not want that man should raise against him out of pride and become his rival. In Scriptures, God father reiterates many times about his supremacy over man and said:

I am the God who created you. (Is 43:1)

I am the Alpha and Omega. (Is 44:6 & Rev 22:13)

There is no limit to my power. (Num 11:23)

There is no God other than me. (Is 45:5)

I am the God of your ancestors. (Ex 3:6-8)

You should worship no god other than me. (Ex 20:1-5)

I do not tolerate rivals. (Ex 34:14 & Nahum 1:2)

There is no end to my Power and Kingdom. (Is 9:7 & Dan 6:26)

Yes, from the above verses we understand God asserts that; 'he is the only Supreme power'. Without doubt these words very clearly conveys the following message:

i) That; "Our God is the Supreme Spiritual Ruler and Authority". (Col 2:10)

ii) That; "Man should be honour God above all."(Wid 6:12-21)

iii) That; "Our God does not tolerate any rival power to raise against him and to challenge him". (Ex 34:14 & Nahum 1:2)

Rather to put it in simple words; our God does not want that any other 'force' (or) 'power' to raise against him or to take the place of his honour. This is our God's Mind. When God gave Ten Commandments to Moses, in the very first Commandment God clearly pronounced that; "I am the Lord your God who brought you out of Egypt, where you were slaves. Worship no other god but me. (EX 20:2-3) Thus our God has expressed his mind that he is the Supreme Ruler and Authority.

Further, God wants that man should be humble. We read in Scriptures that when God created angels, they existed like God in every aspect but they were not God. This made one third of the angels to rebel against God. They questioned him; "Why we should worship & honour you, since we have the same nature as you?" These angels who rebelled against God were filled with pride and did not want to bow down before their Creator & worship him. Hence they were thrown out of paradise in hell. They became devils. (2 Pet 2:4 & Rev 12:1-17)

These angles who rebelled against God in pride were destined for eternal damnation. (Jude 1:6) **The Message is clear; "No one can stand in God's sight with pride."** "God hates and can't tolerate a proud look". (Prov 6:16-19) What God wants in man is "humbleness". God said; "I live with humble and repentant people." (Is 57:15)

But, God gave man his own power and authority: *The word of God says that God made man in his own likeness/image (Gen 1:27) and gave him his own power. (Is 59:21) Also God gave man authority over every things he created, (Gen 1:26 & Heb 2:7-8) including power and authority over the evil spirits. (Luke 10:19 & Mk 16:17-18) Finally, God said; "when you go out to give my words to others; you become gods". (Ps 82:6 & Jh 10:34-35) These promises are true (Jh 17:17) God is faithful to these promises. (2 Tim 2:13) These words confirms that God empowered man with power & authority because God does not withhold anything good for us. (Ps 84:11)*

GOD DID NOT WANT TO CONDEMN MANKIND FOR ETERNAL DAMATION BECAUSE OF PRIDE

Since God gave man wisdom, knowledge, understanding, power & authority he did not want man to be filled with pride like the fallen angels and rebel against him. Yes, God did not want that man also to be swollen in pride like those fallen angels and be condemned to hell. Out of everlasting love and concern for man, (Jer 31:3) God made man weak in flesh so that man would fall for temptations and commit sin. Then in humbleness man will depend on God's mercy & love to redeem him from the awful situation and stand awe of him.

>> *St Paul tells us the spiritual truth, that; "We should not become proud and turn away from God because of the spiritual blessings we receive from him". So, to keep him away from being swollen in pride, God gave him painful ailment which was hurting him very badly so that he will seek Lord's mercy in humbleness.*

>> Though St Paul prayed to God thrice to heal him of his ailment, God did not heal him in-spite of his intimate relation with God. But God answered him by saying: "My grace is all you need, for my power is the greatest when you are weak."

>> At this juncture, God gave St Paul wisdom to understand God's eternal plan. This understanding gave him the grace to accept his sufferings for the glory of God. Hence he said: "I am most happy, then, to be proud of my weakness (suffering), in order to feel the protection of Christ's power over me. St Paul said; for when I am weak I am strong spiritually. (2 Cor 12:8-10)

>> St Paul acknowledges this spiritual truth and said;; "To keep me from being puffed up with pride because of many wonderful things I saw in my vision & my great call to spread the Good News, I was given painful ailment, which acts like Satan's messenger to beat me & keep me from being proud"(2 Cor 12:7).

St Paul conveys believers that; "pride in man will take away humbleness and make man to rebel against God. There-by man will become God's enemy". In pride, Man will be condemned for eternal damnation like the fallen angels. Hence, to avoid man being condemned to hell, God made man weak in flesh to fall in sin, so that; "Man would look upon God for his mercy in humbleness and stand awe of God's Holiness". This is the reason why God in his wisdom permitted man to fall in sin.

Dear Believers, this discernment may appear that the author is giving his own theory. It may be difficult to accept these explanations. But it becomes easy to accept these explanations because the Scriptures substantiates these explanations. *With this understanding we shall proceed to explore the reasons; "Why God permitted man to fall in sin? (Or) Why God made man sinful"?*

Following are the reasons why God made man weak in flesh to fall for temptations and commit sin:

1. God wants man to be humble and stand in awe of him.
2. God wants man to depend on his un-ending mercy.
3. God wants man to understand sacrificial love of Christ.
4. God wants man to understand his unending forgiveness.
5. God wants to give man the grace to forgive his enemies.
6. God wants man to experience continuous spiritual renewal.
7. God wants to give man a Sure Foundation in spiritual life.

REASON -1: GOD MADE US SINFUL SO THAT;

"WE WILL STAND IN AWE OF HIM" FOR THE FOLLOWING REASONS

We stand in awe of God because of his awesome holiness; Yes, when we as a sinful persons return to God for forgiveness, we stand in awe of him because of his awesome holiness, for his words says:

>> "You are feared in the council of the holy ones and all of them stand in awe of you". (Ps 89:7)

>> "There is only one who is wise and we must stand in awe before his holy throne". (Sir 1:8)

We stand in awe of God; Because of his un-ending mercy:

When we sin and turn back to God with repentance, we stand in awe of him because of his great mercy; for his words says:

>> "His mercy is as great as his majesty." (Sirach 2:18)

>> "His grace and mercy are like a spring that never runs dry" (2 Esdras 2:32)

>> "His mercy endures forever". (Song of Three: 67-68)

>> "His Mercy triumphs over judgment" (James 2:13)

We stand in awe of God; Because of his everlasting love: When we sin and turn back to God with repentance, we stand in awe of him because of his everlasting love; for his words says:

>> "His love has no length or breath, and it has no height or depth. We may come to know of his love, but it can never be measured or understood by human mind" (Eph 3:17-19)

>> "Mountains and hills may crumble but God's love for us will never end". "I will keep forever my promise of peace, says the Lord who loves us." (Is 54:10)

>> "His love endures forever and his goodness lasts for all generation." (Ps 101:17)

>> "His love is all consuming love; because of this love he carried our sins in his body to the cross for the salvation of mankind." (1 Pet 2:24)

>> "He Loved us with an 'Agape love; Emptying love', which made him to sacrifice his life willingly on the cross for the people he loved" (Phil 2:6-8)

>> "His love gives us New Life" (Zephaniah 3:17).

>> "His love never changes for Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever." (Heb 13: 8)

>> Because, "He loves us with an everlasting love." (Jer 31:3)

We stand in awe of God; because of his endless forgiveness:

When we return to him with repentance, we stand in awe of him because of his promise to forgive us endlessly; for his Words of says:

>> "Although your sins are deep red, you will be as white as wool; I will wash you as clean as snow."(Is 1:18)

>> "I will not keep account of our sins."(2 Cor 5:19)

>> "I will forgive their sins and will no longer remember their wrongs."(Heb 8:12)

>> I am the God who forgives your sins. I do this because of who I am. I will not hold your sins against you. (Is 43:25)

>> How much ever sinful we are, God promises that; "I will never leave you; I will never forsake you." (Heb 13:8)

>> "You forgive us so that we stand in awe of you. (Ps 130:4)

We stand in awe of God; because he provides all our needs in spite of us being sinners:

When we return in repentance, we stand in awe of him because he provides everything in spite of our sinfulness;_for his words says:

>> "All living things look hopefully to you and you give them food when they need it. You give them enough and satisfy all their needs in spite of their sinfulness." (Ps 145:15-16)

>> "The Lord provides for those he loves while they are asleep." (Ps 127:2)

>> "God provides security to borders of the country and provides finest wheat to the righteous and sinners and satisfy them."(Ps 147:13-14)

>> "He made water come from a rock for the rebellious people; he split the rock open and the water flowed out."(Is 48:21)

>> "He satisfies those who are thirsty and fill the hungry with good things". (Ps 107:9)

>> God provides sun-shine on sinners & righteous alike. He gives rain to those who are good and those who are wicked. (Mat 5:45)

We stand in awe of God because he gives protection to sinners:

When we return in repentance, we stand in awe of him for he gives protection to all of us who are sinners. His words says:

>> "I will make a covenant with them that guarantees their security. I will get rid of all the dangerous animals in the land so that my sheep can live safely in the fields and sleep in the forests" (Ezekiel 34:25).

>> "You are my people. I have given you my teachings, and I will protect you with my hand" (Isaiah 51:16).

>> "He will keep us safe from all hidden dangers and from all the deadly disease. He will cover us with his wings and we will be safe in his care. His faithfulness will protect us, defend us. (Psalms 91:3-4)

We stand in awe of God; because of our foolishness: When we commit sin in our foolishness and return to him with repentance, we stand in awe of him because his words says:

>> "There is only one who is wise; we must stand in awe before is Holy Throne."(Sir 1:8)

>> "He says to clever people, those who claim to be man of wisdom and great scholar; "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise & set aside understanding of the scholars."(1 Cor 1:19)

>> "No wonder, then, that everyone stands awe of him and that he ignores those who claim to be wise."(Job 37:24)

We stand in awe of God; because of his promises: When we return to him with repentance we stand in awe of him because of his promises; which says:

>> "I will now end the power of Assyria over you and break chains that binds you."(Nahum 1:13)

>> "I will go with you and I will give you victory".(Ex 33:14)

>> "No weapon will be able to hurt you: you will have an answer for all who accuse you. I will defend my servants and give them victory. I the Lord have spoken."(Is 54:17)

>> The Lord says; "Because of my Covenant with you that was sealed with-blood of sacrifices, I will set my people free from the waterless pit of exile. (Zech 9:11)

>> "I will burn around my people as a wall of fire to protect them and dwell in them with all my glory."(Zech 2:5)

We stand in awe of God; because of his faithfulness to his promises: When we return to him in repentance, we stand awe of him because he is faithful to his promises as his Words says:

>> "I will lead my blind people through the roads they have never travelled. I will turn their darkness into light and make a rough country road smooth before them. These are my promises and I will keep them without fail" (Is 42:16)

>> "He who called you will do it, because he is faithful."(1 Thess 5:24)"

>> "If we are not faithful, he remains faithful because he cannot be false to himself."(2 Tim 2:13)

>> "The Lord is faithful to all his promises and merciful in all his acts. (Ps 145:13)

>> "His love is strong & his faithfulness is Eternal" (Ps 117:2)

The words from Scriptures gives us discernment that; because we are sinful, we stand in awe before God for the above reasons.

REASON-2: GOD MADE US SINFUL SO THAT;

"WE WILL ALWAYS DEPEND ON GOD'S MERCY"

Sin makes us to lose the glorious privilege of being God's children. Because when we sin, we go away from the Lord out of pride, lust, greed, arrogance, anger, idol worship and every sinful attitude. If we continue to live in sin we come under satanic bondage. We lose the glorious presence of the Lord in our soul and hence, we experience pain, agony, distress, physical and spiritual sufferings. Rather God says that; "In sin we come under cloud of darkness to live in the land of shadow and grope in the darkness, starving for the light of the Lord?" (Is 9:2) Hence we lose joy, peace and rest that the Lord offers. We live in separation / in exile. Hence we cannot rejoice in the Lord. At this stage in life, nothing of this world "whatever precious thing of our heart's desire" which we possess will give us happiness. Because we have lost the 'Glorious Privilege' of being God's children to live in 'Amazing' Presence of the Lord. (Baruch 4:3)

Because of sin God sends us to exile. In Scriptures we read many instances where people displease the Lord by sinning and lose God's presence because he has sent them to exile. In exile they live in pain & suffering, longing for the presence of the Lord. Prophet Zechariah said; "Disobedience is the cause for exile".

The Lord spoke through Zechariah: He said; "Long ago I gave this message to my people: You must see that justice is done. You must show kindness and mercy to one another. Do not oppress widows, orphans, foreigners who live among you or anyone else in need. And do not plan ways of harming one another. But, my people stubbornly refuse to listen. They closed their mind and made their hearts as hard as rock. Because they have not listen to teaching which I sent through prophets who lived long ago, I became angry. Because they did not listen when I spoke, I will not answer their prayer. Like a storm I swept them away to live in foreign countries (sent them to exile). This good land was left as deserted with no one living in it. (Zech 7:8-14)

The meaning of this word of God is: By living in sin we lose peace, joy & rest in soul because we lose God's glorious presence in us. If we sin, we take judgement on ourselves as Jesus said; "This is how the judgment works; the light (Christ) has come in to the world, but people love darkness (Satan) rather than light because their deeds are evil." (Jh 3:19) Yes, by living in sin we live in the misery of being

separated from God's glorious presence there-by we lose joy, peace and rest which Christ gives. Our life will be miserable without the Lord's presence in us. God calls this miserable life as; 'living in exile'.

But the Lord's unfailing mercy still continues. When we realise this hard fact and return to God with repentance & fasting, he forgives us and restores all blessings we have lost due to sin, as Prophet Joel said; **"On hearing God's warning to return to him with fasting and prayer, people obeyed"**. Hence God said; "I will give you back what you have lost in years when swarms of locust ate your crops. It was I who sent the army against you. (God sent people to live in exile to experience suffering) Now you will have plenty to eat and be satisfied. You will praise the Lord your God who has done wonderful things for you". (Joel 2:25-26)

When God forgives our sins he restores his presence in our soul. We regain the lost paradise of living in joy, peace, and rest in his presence. Also we receive healing in body & soul. We re-establish our communion with God through the 'Sacrament of Confession'. Our God, knowing our sinfulness & our weakness for sin, in his mercy has promise that; "However red our sins are, he will wash us as clean as snow by his precious blood. Although our sins are as deep red, we will be as white as wool." (Is 1:18)

It is not just for one time God is washing our sins to cleanse us. Any number of times we sin and return to him with repentance, God accepts us, forgives us & washes our sins with his precious blood because he says; "Israel, you are my dearest son, the child I love the best. Whenever I mention your name, I think of you with love. My heart goes out to you; I will be merciful" (Jer 31:20) Yes, "God is full of compassion & mercy" (James 5:11) He is powerful to anything, but he is merciful to everyone. He overlooks sins & gives time for us to repent and forgives us, (Wis 11:23) because, God's unfailing mercy still continues; fresh as morning, as sure as sunrise. (Lem 3:22-23)

Our Lord may forsake us for a brief moment (because of our wickedness) but, with great compassion he will gather us when we repent & look for his forgiveness. (Is 54:7) He promises that; "Mountains may depart, hills may be crumbled. But my mercy will never depart from you. (Is 54:10) This is how the Lord's unfailing compassion comes through his eternal mercies. (Ps 136:1-26)

Because of our sins, we become objects of God's mercy. *By his great mercy he gave us new life by raising Jesus Christ from death.*

*This fills us with a living hope and so we look forward to possess rich blessings that God has kept for his people. (1Pet 1:3-4) God wanted to reveal his abundant glory which he has poured out on us who are objects of his mercy, those of whom he has prepared to receive his glory. (Rom 9:23) Here, God clearly asserts that; we are created to live by depending upon his mercy, because he said; "we are the objects of his mercy". **This is the mind of our God.***

Further St Paul amplifies that God made us disobedient and sinful so that we depend on his mercy. He said; "God made all people prisoners of disobedience so that he might show mercy to them all. (Rom 11:32) This clarifies without any doubt that God made human beings weak in flesh so that we will fall in sin and depend on God for his mercy to restore our lost blessings.

His Mercy comes to us as a spring that never goes dry. When we sin again and again, we go back to God again and again for forgiveness, because his mercy endures forever. (Song of three 67-68) He forgives us because he is faithful for his promise; "I will never forsake you or I will never reject you." (Heb 13:5) When God forgives our sins, our spirit gets renewed. And, that's how the following Word of God gets fulfilled; "Our Body is decaying gradually, (because of sin) yet, our spiritual being is renewed day after day". (2Cor 4:16)

God wants that we should live only in this way by entirely depending on his mercy day-by-day. Because;

>> "His mercy is as great as his majesty" (Sir 2:18)

>> "His mercy is so abundant and his love is so great, that while we our spiritually dead in our disobedience he brought us back to life in union with Christ. (Eph 2:4-5)

>> "The Lord is full of Mercy and Compassion. (Ps 103:8)

>> And because, **"His mercy comes to us like a 'spring' that never goes dry"** (2 Esdras 2:32)

God made man weak in flesh so that we fall in sin repeatedly and become prisoners of disobedience, and become objects of his mercy and live entirely depending on God's mercy day-by-day for forgiveness of our sins and restoration of lost blessings.

Yes, God made us sinful by nature because; in our spiritual life we will not become proud, but come to God in humbleness trusting his mercy, looking for his forgiveness of our sins for; "His mercy Triumphs over Judgment" (Jas 2:13)

REASON-3: GOD MADE US SINFUL SO THAT;

"WE UNDERSTAND GOD'S SACRIFICIAL LOVE"

If we carefully examine the ulterior motive for all our sins, we will realise that it was our 'selfish desires' that made us commit sin repeatedly. Selfish desire is a 'self-centred negative impulse' which drives us to do evil. Self-centred desire is against the essence of Christ's teaching which is; 'Love'. "Jesus Christ said; 'Love one another as I loved you'. (Jh 13:34-35)

All teachings of Christ are based on love. Because, without love in heart, without practicing love in true sense in our physical life & spiritual life, we can't come near God to experience his love and his presence. St John said; "No one has ever seen God, but if we love one another, God lives in union with us & his love is made perfect in us." (1 Jh 4:12). St Paul said; among faith, hope & love, "Love" is the greatest of all. (1Cor 1-13) Please read this chapter to understand the importance that God gives for Love, which must be practiced.

Why did Jesus Christ offer himself to die on the cross 'for us' who are sinners? The answer to this question will enlighten us about the 'Emptying love' of Jesus Christ. God's love for his children is so great that; "even before the world was created, God had already chosen us to be his through Jesus Christ so that we would be holy and without fault before him." (Eph 1:4) God loves us with an everlasting love (Jer 31:3) because, we belong to God and we are precious to him. (Is 43:4 & 7)

In this discourse we will understand the everlasting, sacrificial love of Jesus Christ

God wants that we should remain pure in our heart, in our mind, in our body, in our spirit and in our soul. Because, no one can enter the Kingdom of God by living in sin. (Gal 5:19-21) We should remove the old yeast of sin, so that we will remain entirely pure. (1 Cor 5:7)

But, we lose our purity in the following manner:

Impurity in heart: Jesus said; "People honour God with their lips but their hearts are far away from him". (Mat 15:8-9) Because of this false worship, people's hearts have become stubborn. (Ezr 11:19-20) Yes, their hearts have become evil and unbelieving that they turn away from living God. (Heb 3:12) And so, God has given

these people over to do the filthy things of their heart desires and they do shameful thing with each other. They exchange truth about God for a lie; they worship and serve what God has created instead of the Creator himself. (Rom 1:24-25) *This is how we commit sin in our heart. A real Christian is the person who has truth (Christ) on the inside; that is, his heart is circumcised. (Rom 2:29)*

Impurity in mind: God said; “People know God. But they do not give the honour that belongs to him, nor do they thank him. Instead, their thoughts have become complete nonsense, and their empty minds are filled with darkness. (Rom 1:21) They say that they are wise but they are fools. Instead of worshiping immortal God, they worship images made to look like man or animals or birds or reptiles.(Rom 1:22-23) Because they refuse to keep in mind the true knowledge about God, he has given them over to corrupt minds, so they do things that they should not do. Also they approve of others doing it. They are filled with wickedness and continue to live in wickedness fully knowing that they will be condemned by God for eternal damnation.”(Rom 1:28-32) *God rebukes people who are impure in their mind.*

Impurity in body: God said “My temple (our body) is not a hiding place for robbers.” (Evil spirits) (Jer 7:11) Further God warns that; there are many whose lives make them enemies of Christ. They are going to end up in hell, because their god is their bodily desires. They are proud of what they are to be ashamed of. (Here God refers to immoral life, sex with animals, adultery, orgy, spouse swapping, gay and lesbian relations) They think only of things that belongs to this world. (Phil 3: 18-19) Even women pervert the natural use of their sex by unnatural acts. In the same way men give up their natural sexual relation with women and burn with passion for each other. (Rom 1:26-27) *A person who is guilty of prostitution, sexual immorality, gay/lesbian relation, drug abuse, who indulges in child sex and pornography commits sin against his own body. (1Cor 6:18) This is how people of the world make their body impure.*

Impurity in spirit: Before man committed sin, man was using his spirit to communicate with God. When man sinned against God, he was sent out of the Garden of Eden. And God decreed that man should not use his own spirit for any spiritual activity. But the Satan teaches man how to use human spirit to disobey God. *Man learns how to use his spirit from Satan to hypnotise others and do black magic. He uses his own spirit to perform rajah yoga, communicate with the spirits of dead, perform reiki healing, pranic healing. By*

using his spirit, man indulges in satanic worship/pagan worship. Thus people become impure in spirit. (Is 65:3-7)

Impurity in the soul: Our Christian faith is; “We believe in one God, the Father Almighty who exists in “Holy Trinity”. (God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit.) Similarly, man who was created in the likeness of God also exists in ‘human trinity’. The human trinity consists of our body, our soul and our human spirit (1 Thess 5:23, 1 Cor 15:44 & Wis 15:11). God breaths our soul in us when we are conceived in the mother's womb. (Wis 15:11) Our soul returns to God after our body dies. (2 Esdras 7:78) God’s words says that; “Jesus is the keeper of our souls”. (1Pet 2:25) This means, we belong to Jesus Christ alone. But, wicked people enter into pagan worship / satanic worship and commit their soul to Satan by making a promise to him using their own blood. They enter in to partnership with the Satan to worship him and to serve him as his slave.

Yes, people make a covenant with Satan by cutting their hand, pouring their blood in a chalice, offer it to Satan and make a promise that their soul will belong to Satan. They commit their soul to Satan and live as his slave to receive satanic powers. They commit their life to Satan for glorifying him and to work for him. Similarly people who practice witchcraft & magic, commit their soul to Satan to receive magical powers. This is how people commit sin against their soul.

People who will not possess the Kingdom of God. Now we have understood how people commit sin in their heart, mind, body, spirit and soul. This is how people live in sin and go far away from God. To such people God said; “The wicked will not possess the Kingdom of God. People who are immoral, who worship idols, who are adulterers or homosexuals or sexual perverts, who are greedy, who are drunkards, who steal others, and who are thieves. None of these people will possess God’s Kingdom.”(1 Cor 6:9-10)

Further God said; “What human nature does is quite plain. It shows itself in immoral, filthy, & indecent actions in worship of idols and witch craft. People become enemies, they fight; they become jealous, angry and ambitious. They separate into parties and groups. They are envious, get drunk, have orgies and do other things like these; such people will not possess Kingdom of God.”(Gal 5:19-21)

People who will be condemned to eternal damnation. When the Most High decide that a person has to die, the person physically dies.
The souls of the people who had no use for the ways of the

Most High and hated those who worshiped him, will have no place to rest; they will wander about forever in torment, grief and sorrow. Their torment will progress in the following seven stages:

Stage 1: They ignore the Law of the Most High.

Stage 2: They can no longer make sincere repentance and obtain life.

Stage 3: They see the rewards that are stored up for those who put their faith in the covenants of the Most High.

Stage 4: They think about the torment that has been stored up for them in the last days.

Stage 5: They see the angels guarding the homes of other souls in silence.

Stage 6: They recognise that they will soon be tormented.

Stage 7: Worst of all when they see the glory of the Most High, they are sick with remorse and shame. They cringe in fear, because while they were living they sinned against God. And now they are to come before him to be judged on the last day. (2 Esdras 7:78-87)

God devised a way to redeem the fallen human race: This is how life will be after death for those who live unrighteous life on this earth. This is the Law of the Most High and no one can change it. God the Father knew about the plight of souls of sinners after death. Out of his everlasting love, he did not want the fallen human race to go for such eternal damnation. Out of his great mercy, he devised a way to redeem the fallen human race from this danger. Hence he sent his own Son, Jesus Christ, to pay the price for redemption of human race from their sin. According to God's eternal plan, Jesus Christ was sent to this world as the Redeemer. (Eph 1:7-11) He lived as an ordinary human being through being a Son of God. Jesus took up sufferings willingly as a slave for the love he had for the sinners.

Jesus did not want the fallen human race to go through torments in seven stages as explained above. That is why Jesus willingly took up cross for us knowing his own fate. There is no comparison on this earth for sufferings that Jesus had undergone to pay price for our sins. This is called Agape love or Emptying love or Sacrificial love of Jesus that God revealed to this sinful world so that we may also follow Jesus and live by sacrificing our life for others.

We can't understand the sacrificial love: If we are alive for Christ, he gives us grace to understand the depth of his 'Sacrificial love.' However, we can never understand it fully. St Paul said; "May Christ make his home in your hearts through faith. I pray that you may have your roots & foundation in love, so that you together with

God's people, may have power to understand how broad & long, how high & deep is Christ's love. Yes, you may come to know of his love-although it can never be fully known."(Eph 3:17-19). ***St Paul experienced love of Jesus very closely and intensely. This experience made him the greatest evangelist on earth. He said; 'though we may experience his love, in our human mind & wisdom, we can never know or understand the magnitude, greatness and abundance about Christ's love. (Eph 3:17-19)***

Jesus expressed his sacrificial love on the cross: Christ preached truth about the Kingdom of God to open people's eyes for faith and their minds for Scriptures. When people understood Jesus, they were drawn towards him. The High Priests & Pharisees who were practicing Law of Moses feared that they would lose their importance amongst people and Christ would gain. Out of selfish motive and jealousy they hatched a plan to put an end to Christ. In spite of knowing the wicked mind of people whom he loved, and the severity of his suffering, Christ did not give up. Because of his sacrificial love for mankind, he was willing to die on the cross like a criminal.

God made us sinners to understand his sacrificial love. Thus Jesus expressed his sacrificial love for the people who hated him and for the sinners. Thus he became an example. He sacrificed his life to set mankind free from the bondage of sin. (Col 2:13-14) Not realising the importance of this sacrificial love we commit sin and turn away from him. But he waits patiently for our repentance as St Paul said; "All day long God holds out his hands to welcome a disobedient and rebellious people."(Rom 10:21) When we repent and return to him, he gathers us with great compassion, (Is 54:7) because his love never changes. (Heb 13:8) We are ashamed of our act because of what Christ did for us and how we reciprocated towards his sacrificial love. At this moment we realise; "how deep is his love for us"?

Christ's sacrificial love is expressed in the Scriptures:

>> *"I will give up Egypt to set you free. I will give up Sudan & Sheba. I will give up whole nation to save your life because you are precious to me."(Is 43:3-4)*

>> *"Mountains & hills may crumble, but my love for you will never end. I will keep forever my promise of peace, says God who loves us."(Is 54:10)*

>> *"I will look for those who are lost, bring back those that wandered off, bandage those that are hurt and heal those that are sick; because I am the shepherd who does what is right."(Ez1 34:16) "I will go out looking for the lost sheep."(Mat 18:12)*

>> *"On the cross Jesus prayed for his persecutors. He prayed; Father forgive them for they do not know what they do."*(Luk 23:34)

Dear believer, if you repent truly you will understand the real meaning and depth of sacrificial love of Christ in his forgiveness. God wants that every soul in this world should understand this love, accept this love and rejoice in this love, so that they may fulfil God's will which is; "to glorify God in their life by sharing their love with others".(1 Cor 6:19-21)

REASON - 4: GOD MADE US SINFUL SO THAT;

"WE MAY UNDERSTAND HIS UNENDING FORGIVENESS"

God uses our weakness and sinfulness to make us understand his unending forgiveness and his forgiving love. Because how much ever sinful we are, no matter how many times we commit the same sin, if we truly repent and turn to him our God does not reject us; for God said:

"I have swept your sins away like a cloud. Come back to me; I am the only one who can save you." (Is 44:22) Further, he says; "I will not hold you guilty of your sins "(Rom 8:34) Mountains and hills may crumble. But my love for you will never end. (Is 54:10) Jesus Christ said; "Who can separate you from my unending love? (Rom 8:35) "I will never leave you. I will never forsake you. (Heb 13:5) Finally he said; I am the God who forgive your sins. I do this because of whom I am. I will not hold your sins against you. (Is 43:25)

God has spoken on his unending forgiveness:

Through prophet Isaiah God said; "I am the God who forgives your sins, and I do this because of whom I am. I will not hold your sins against you." (Is 43:25) However red your sins are, I will wash you and make you as white as snow. (Is 1:18)

Through prophet Ezekiel God said; I will renew my covenant with you and you will know that I am the Lord. I will forgive all the wrongs you have done. (Ezkl 16:62-64)

Through King David God said; "If God keeps record of our sins then no one on this earth will escape being condemned. He forgives sins and saves his people from all their sins. (Ps 130:3 & 8) Further God said; "As far as the east is from the west the Lord removes our sins from us."(Ps 103:12).

Through Prophet Micah God said; "The Lord does not stay angry forever. But he takes pleasure in forgiving our sins by showing his constant love. He will be merciful once again & trample our sins under his foot and send them to the bottom of the sea."(Micah 7:18-19)

Through Prophet Jeremiah God said; "I will purify them from their sins that they have committed against me. I will forgive their sins and their rebellion. (Jer 33:8) I will heal the city and its people and restore them to health. I will show them abundance of peace and security. I will make Judah and Israel prosperous again and I will rebuild them as before. (Jer 33: 6-7)

Every time we sin and turn to God in repentance he renews his covenant with us saying; "I will put my laws within them and write it on their hearts. I will be their God and they will be my people. I will forgive their sins and I will no longer remember their wrongs. I the Lord have spoken". (Jer 31:33-34).

When Jesus came, he said; "I came for the sinners."(Luk 5:32) To the woman who was caught in adultery Jesus said; "I will not condemn you for your sins." (Jh 8:11) "To the paralysed man he said; "the Son of man has authority to forgive sins". Go, your sins are forgiven." (Luk 5:18-26) Jesus preached that we have to forgive our offenders seventy times seven. (Met 18:22) Which means, we have to forgive our offenders endlessly. If Christ has given us command to forgive our offenders endlessly, then how many times more will Jesus Christ forgive us when we sin repeatedly and return to him with true repentance? It is unimaginable! This only reveals his endless forgiveness.

St Paul speaks about the unending forgiveness of Christ. He said; "If God is for us who can be against us? Certainly not God who did not even hold back his only Son, but offered him as a sacrifice for our sins! Who will accuse God's chosen people? God himself declares them not guilty. Who then will condemn them? Not Christ Jesus who died and was raised to life and is at the right hand side of God pleading with him for us. (Rom 8:31-34) This is the secret of God's endless forgiving love for mankind.

Unending Forgiveness through God's Covenant:

Finally, at the Lord's Supper Jesus took a cup, gave thanks to God and gave it his disciples. He said; "Drink it all of you; this is my blood which seals God's covenant; my blood poured out for many for the

forgiveness of sins". (Mat 26:26-27) On the cross Jesus Christ took all the sins of mankind upon himself to set the human race free from the burden of sin. (1 Pet 2:24)

Christ's death on cross offers us unending forgiveness: We were spiritually dead because of our sins. But God has brought us to life through Jesus Christ. Now Christ has given us new life by forgiving all our sins. Through Christ, God has cancelled all unfavourable records of our debts with its binding rules and did away with it completely by nailing it on the cross. (Col 2:13-15)

Christ himself carried our sins in his body to the cross so that we might die for sin and live for righteousness. (2 Pet 2:25) On the cross, Christ has freed himself (along with mankind) from the power of spiritual rulers & authorities of darkness. (Col 2:15) It is God's grace that we have been saved. In union with Jesus Christ God raised us up with him to rule with him in the heavenly world. (Eph 2:5-6)

Thus, Jesus Christ fulfilled the covenant which God made with his people through Prophet Zechariah, where he said; "Because of my covenant with you that was sealed by the blood of sacrifices, I will set your people free from this waterless pit of exile" (Zach 9:11).

Unending forgiveness through faith:

Jesus preached that we should forgive our offenders seventy times seven. (Met 18:22) Here, he tells us that we should forgive our offenders endlessly. This means; when we forgive our offenders endlessly, Jesus Christ will also forgive our sins endlessly, if we repent truly every time when we commit sin. Believers are advised to meditate on this truth hidden in this Word of God to understand the unending forgiveness that God offers us so that we may understand the love of God for mankind.

Yes, "God the Father offered Jesus Christ so that by his sacrificial death he should become means by which peoples sins are forgiven through their faith in him."(Rom 3:25) We receive this endless forgiveness offered by Christ only through our faith in him and faith in his sacrificial death on the cross for the forgiveness of sin. Believers should be on guard (Mk 13:5) so that they are not deceived by the Satan to fall in this faith that; **"we receive endless forgiveness through faith in Christ."** Because, the Satan is always trying to destroy our faith in Christ and our faith in his Ministry of "Repentance and Forgiveness".

If we lose faith in the ministry of forgiveness given to us through the Sacrament of Confession, then we are lost for this unending forgiveness through faith. We win victory in this world against our enemy through faith. (1 John 5:4) Without faith we cannot please our God, and we will be lost for salvation. (Heb 11:6) Yes, without faith we cannot receive Salvation what Jesus has promised. He said; "I am the resurrection and life. Whoever believes in me will live even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die." (Jh 11:25) This is how faith in endless forgiveness of sin works in the Kingdom of God to attain Salvation.

Unending forgiveness in Precious Blood of Jesus:

In 'Old Covenant', animals were offered as sacrifice to purify people from sins.(Lev 16:2-34 & Num 19:9-17) But the offerings and animal sacrifices presented to God could not make the worshipers heart perfect, since they have to do with food, drink, and various purification ceremonies. These were outwardly rules which apply only till the time when God established "New Covenant". (Heb 9:9-10)

In the New Covenant God offered not the blood of animals for cleansing the sins of people. But he offered the Blood of his own Son Jesus Christ as sacrifice. Christ took his own blood and obtained eternal Salvation for us. Christ offered himself as a perfect sacrifice to God. His blood will purify our consciences from useless rituals so that we may serve God. For this reason Christ is the one who arranges a new covenant, so that those who have been called by God may receive eternal blessings that God has promised. (Heb: 8-15)

"If we live in the light-just as Jesus is in the light-then we have fellowship with one another and the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from every sin"(1 Jh :7) This is how the blood which was poured out for our sins (Mat 26:28) cleanses us from our sins endlessly. Yes, the blood of Christ forgives our sins endlessly because, Jesus said; "There is no condemnation for those who live in union with Christ" (Rom 8:1)

Yes dear believers; so long we have fellowship with Christ, i.e., we are in communion with Christ through faith (Jh 15:1-5) he assures us that we will receive forgiveness through his blood, for, Jesus Christ promised that: "Because I live, you also will live." (Jh 14:19) This means; through Christ's endless forgiveness we will be purified from our sins by the blood that was poured out for our sins on the Mount Calvary. Yes, the Blood of Jesus sanctifies our sins.

UNENDING FORGIVENESS IN THE NAME "JESUS CHRIST"

"All Prophets spoke about Jesus Christ. They said; that everyone who believes in him will have his sins forgiven through the power of his Name."(Acts 10:43) That's why St Paul said; "There is no condemnation for those who live in union with Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit which brings life in union with Christ Jesus has set us free from sin and death." (Rom 8:1-2) This is how the "Covenant for Forgiveness" of sins works. (Mat 26:27-28) And Jesus said; every one whom my Father gives me will come to me. (For forgiveness of their sins) I will never turn away any one who comes to me, because; "I have come down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me." (Jh 6:37-38) Further Jesus said; "I have come for the sinners. (Luk 5:32)

This is how unending forgiveness in the name of Jesus works. Yes, how much ever sinful we are, no matter how many times we have committed sin, if we come to Jesus with true repentance, acknowledging our weakness, he will forgive us endlessly. This is how we receive endless forgiveness through faith in the Name "Jesus" because, "Salvation comes from the Name: "Jesus" (Jonah 2:9) "Salvation is to be found through his Name alone; in all creation there is no other name other than the name 'Jesus ' whom God has given, who can saves us from our sins" (Acts 4:12)

So, when we are drowned in sin and marooned in crimes, God makes use of our sinfulness to make us understand the length & breath and height & depth of Christ's love, (Eph 3:17-19) through his unending forgiveness by making us experience his "Forgiving Love" no matter however sinful we are.

REASON - 5: HE MADE US SINFUL SO THAT:

"WE RECEIVE GRACE TO FORGIVE OUR ENEMY"

About forgiveness God said:

- > "Forgive your enemies and love them". (Mat 5:44)
- > "Be tolerant with one another & forgive one another whenever any one of you has a complaint against someone else. You must forgive one another as the Lord forgives you". (Col 3:13)
- > "When you forgive someone for what he has done, I forgive him too; so that the Satan does not get upper hand to cause enmity". (2Cor 2:10-11)

> "Whoever says that he in the light yet hates his brother, he is in the darkness to this very hour because he has not forgiven him. (1 John 2:9)

> "God made us friends through Jesus & did not keep account of our sins because he has forgiven us completely. (2 Cor 5:19)

> Jesus said; "If you forgive people's sins, they are forgiven". (Jh 20:23)

God spoke in this manner to make us understand that we should forgive our enemies/ offenders and should not remember their wrong deeds as Christ forgives us and does not remember our sins anymore. (Rom 8:33-34 & Heb 8:12)

A believer should understand that forgiveness is of two type as explained below:

One: Forgiveness through the Ministry established by Jesus:

Having committed sin against man and God, in repentance we turn back to God and confess our sins to a Priest in R C Church and receive absolution of sins through the Sacrament of Confession. Here, a believer receives forgiveness of his sins through the Ministry instituted by Jesus Christ. Yes, this authority to forgive sins is given to Priests in the Roman Catholic Church by Jesus himself through the power of his Ministry. **Yes, after resurrection Jesus Christ appeared to his disciples** and said: "Peace be with you. As the Father sent me I send you; then he breathed on them and said; receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive people's sins, they are forgiven; if you do not forgive them, they are not forgiven". (Jh20:21-23) Since the Priests in the R C Church are Ministers of the Church instituted by Christ, the authority to forgive sin is conferred on them by Jesus himself. This authority to forgive sins flows from Jesus Christ to Pope, from Pope to Cardinals and Bishops. And from Bishops to Priests in the Roman Catholic Apostolic Church.

Two: Faithful people forgiving the one who offended them.

We are human beings living in our flesh and blood with all weakness. Hence we are bound to step on each other's feet and cause hurt. Causing hurt to others could have been done deliberately or inadvertently. In either way we have hurt our fellow neighbour. The person who has hurt his fellow neighbour may have asked for pardon from the neighbour whom he has hurt (or) he may not have asked for pardon. But the fact remains that; our God is pleased when

we forgive our offenders from the depth of our heart irrespective of whether the offender asked for pardon or not, so that Satan does not gain upper hand over us.

St Paul said; "If you become angry do not stay angry all day. Do not allow the sun to go down on your anger for the devil will get upper hand over you."(Eph 4:26-27) Yes, we have to reconcile with our offender on the very same day so that we live in peace. In doing so we forgive our offender which is an act of love. It is God who sees our heart & knows our feelings (1 Sam 16:7) Yes, when we forgive our offender, God also forgives him. (2Cor 2:10-11) There is no priest involved in this forgiveness.

Without God's grace we cannot forgive:

Jesus said; "we should forgive our offenders seventy times of seven." (Mathew 18:21-22) *It means, there is no end or there is no count in the number of times that we ought to forgive our offenders.*

We need Grace (power) and Divinity (God's presence) to forgive our offenders and that too endlessly. How do we receive this grace to forgive others? We receive this grace from the 'Lord himself' through the Sacrament of Confession. Yes, when the Lord forgives our sin unendingly in the Sacrament of Confession, we are renewed in our spiritual life. In this spiritual renewal we are also transformed inwardly to give up our ego, pride, stubbornness and God fills us with grace to become tolerant and merciful with our neighbours. This is a special grace we receive in the Sacrament of Confession whenever we receive forgiveness for our sins. This is how God reveals us his Divine quality of his forgiving nature and also gives us the "Grace and Divine nature" to follow him to forgive others.

The forgiveness we receive fills us with grace to forgive.

This means, God permits us to fall in sin in our weakness. When we commit sin repeatedly we return to God with repentance and confess our sins. He forgives us unconditionally and endlessly. Through this forgiveness what we receive from the Lord, we also receive God's grace and divine nature, which transforms our stubborn hearts and hardened minds and makes us understand God's endless forgiving love. This spiritual experience fills us with the grace that we need to forgive our offenders endlessly in the same manner how our Heavenly Father forgives us unconditionally and endlessly.

God's free gift 'forgiveness' is filled with grace: God wants us to live in this way only, as Jesus conveys this message through a parable; "the unforgiving servant". (Mathew 18:21-35) In this parable Jesus said; a servant who could not repay his debts to the King was forgiven by the King. Hence this person was absolved from being taken as slave along with his family for his outstanding debts. But, this same servant who was forgiven by the King for his debts did not show the mercy which he received from the King to a person who owed him money. He got him arrested and put him in jail. Learning this the King became angry. The King got the first servant arrested and put him also in jail.

The message what Jesus conveys here is; "forgiveness what we receive from God is a free gift". (Rom 6:23) Hence, we should share this free gift "forgiveness" with others freely. Jesus said; "you have received freely and give it freely to others."(Mat 10:8) When we forgive one another and live in love with people, then God will live among us. Thus the following word of God is fulfilled in us; "No one has ever seen God. But if we love one another (by forgiving others) God lives in union with us & his love is made perfect in us.(1 Jh 4:12).

Many times we fall short of God's grace to forgive. In our human weakness we fall short in the fruits of the Holy Spirit. (Love, patience, kindness, goodness, humility and self-control) **This makes us fall as victim for our anger & pride which does not allow us to forgive our offender. Anger & pride makes us fight and become enemies. We are deceived by the devil to harbour grudge, to live in vengeance and to take revenge.**

This is a perfect hand work of Satan to destroy our peaceful relation with people. We need God's grace to overcome such situations which are taking us far away from teachings of Christ. God has promised to bless us with his grace. He said; "My grace is all you need and my power is greatest when you are weak."(2Cor 12:9) We receive this grace through forgiveness of our sins which we revive in the Sacrament of confession. How great is the providence of God that he gives us this grace in such large measure. (Eph 1:7-8) **"God has poured out his Holy Spirit on us abundantly through Jesus Christ so that by his grace we might be put right with God."** (Titus 3:6-7) **Putting right with God means; we are to follow Christ in forgiving our enemies endlessly."** The spirit (man's ego / pride) that God has placed in us is filled with fierce desires. But, grace that God gives us through forgiveness is even stronger." This grace will fill us with power to forgive our offenders endlessly. (Jas 4:5-6) *St Paul said;*

"My son, be strong through this grace which is ours in union with Jesus Christ," because we cannot forgive our offenders endlessly if we are not filled with this grace. (2 Tim 2:1).

FORGIVING GRACE

"When sin increased God's grace increased much more"
Because this world is under the power of Satan, (Gal 3:22) sin has spread in every area of life. Hence people have become more sinful than ever. We are offended by more and more people by their sinful conduct. But God promises to fill us with more and more of his grace to forgive them/our offenders endlessly. God said; "When sin increased, his grace increased much more". (Rom 5:20) So then, just as sin rules by means of death, so also God's grace (Power to forgive endlessly) rules by means of righteousness, leading us to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Rom 5:21) Yes, we are transformed inwardly through this grace to forgive our offenders endlessly.

This is how God uses our sinfulness to receive endless forgiveness from him. This unending forgiveness of the Lord gives us wisdom and grace to understand God's unending forgiving love. The "Special Grace" that we receive through this endless forgiveness transforms us inwardly. (Rom 12:1-2) *Through this forgiveness, God fills us with Grace "Power" to forgive our enemies / offenders endlessly. This is how grace works through power to make us as the chosen race, the Kings Priests, holy nation, God's own people, chosen to proclaim wonderful act of God who is 'helping us to forgive our offenders endlessly' who has called us out of the darkness of 'enmity and revenge', in to his marvellous light to live in peace and love by forgiving our offenders endlessly. (1 Pet 2:9)*

REASON-6: WE ARE MADE SINFUL TO;

EXPERIENCE CONTINUOUS SPIRITUAL RENEWAL.

When we sin, we lose freedom because we are bound by negative emotions. We lose freedom in our heart, mind, soul and spirit. Hence we lose joy, peace and rest which are promised to us by Jesus. He said:

>> "**Peace** is what I leave with you; it is my own peace I give you. I do not give as the world does. Do not be worried and upset; and do not fear" (Jh 14:27)

>> "I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and **your joy** may be complete". (Jh 15:8-11)

>> "Come to me all of you who are tired from carrying heavy loads (weight of our sins) and **I will give you rest**". (Mat 11:28)

But, the Satan comes to take away the freedom in our heart. He makes us a prisoner, refugee, captive and slave for sin there by we are bound by invisible chains, as we read in Ezkl 12:11-12, Is 50:1-2 and Wis 17:17. Because we lose freedom in heart, we live in sadness, guilt, depression, anger, irritation, rejection, and restlessness. After the act of sin, the Satan inflicts us with negative emotions such as; vengeance, revenge, unforgiving attitude, arrogance, insubordination, idolatry, suicidal tendency, division, enmity and many other.

Satan comes to destroy our soul. Jesus said that Satan comes to steal, kill and destroy. (Jh 10:10) Yes, when we commit sin the Satan steals our joy, peace and rest because we lose presence of God in us. This brings spiritual death in our living soul. Our soul ceases to rejoice in the Lord. Sin destroys our relations within our family, with our neighbour and with God. Further, it destroys our body which is the temple of God through sinful habits & relations which leads to sickness. Through these illnesses the Satan will destroy our wealth. If we continue to live in sin having known truth (Christ's teachings) the Satan will destroy our soul because we will be condemned to hell.

God says; because of our sins, we hurt ourselves. (Sir 19:4) Because of sins our body decays, for God said; "your sins will eat up your flesh. (Through sickness). You will be lying in your death bed, your flesh and muscles being eaten away." (Sin which brings sickness will destroy our body). (Pro 5:3-11) Further, God warns us saying; "your riches have rotted away and your clothes have been eaten by moths. Your gold and silver (refers to our body) are covered with rust (rust refers to sin) and this rust (our sins) will witness against you, and eat up your flesh like fire".(refers to the body being destroyed due to sickness)(James 5:2-3)

This gives a clear understanding that most of the disease are caused due to our sins. This is how the Satan who enters our body through sin will destroy our body which is the temple of the Holy Spirit.(1 Cor 3:16-17) In this condition, i.e., living in sickness, if we do not repent and turn back to God but die, our soul will be condemned to hell eternally. The Satan will lure us to commit sin, steal our joy, peace & rest. He will bring sickness to destroy our body & our wealth, and lead us in the path of eternal condemnation and destroy our soul.

God is faithful to his covenant. But when we repent and turn back to God with a sincere heart, God does not reject us. (Psalms 51:17) He forgives us and renews his Spirit in us/ fills us with Holy Spirit, because of the covenant that he made with his people which says; "I will put my law in them and write it on their hearts. I will be their God and they will be my people. None of them will have to teach his fellow men to know the Lord, because all will know me from the least to the greatest. I will forgive their sins and I will no longer remember their wrongs. I the Lord have spoken." (Jer 32:33-34)

The Holy Spirit renews our spirit, soul and body: If we are sincere in heart to turn away from sin and if we actually put it into practice, the Lord will help us by filling us with his grace (power) to overcome temptations. This is the process where the Holy Spirit renews our spirit, soul and body. In this process we receive healing in our spirit, soul and body. This is a continuous spiritual process that takes place in a faithful Christian life whenever he sins, repents and reconciles with God through the Sacrament of Confession. Thus the following Word of God is fulfilled;

"Even though our physical being is gradually decaying (because of sin) yet our Spiritual being (our soul and spirit) is renewed day-by-day." (2 Cor 4:16) King Solomon gave a clear understanding about this 'spiritual renewal processes' in his book-Wisdom. God spoke through him and said; "even though Wisdom acts alone, she can do anything. She makes everything new although she never changes." (Wis 7:27)

This means Wisdom (Spirit of God/ Word of God) will renew our spiritual body, soul & our physical body by healing them. The Spirit of Wisdom will bring "New Life" in us, thereby it will renew our whole being (soul, body & spirit) as prophet Zephaniah said; "The Lord your God is with you; his power gives you victory. The Lord will take delight in you and his love (Spirit of Wisdom) will give you "New Life" in repentance. (Zeph 3:17) Jesus spoke this spiritual truth. He said; "What gives life is God's Spirit; human power is no use at all. The words I have spoken brings God's life-giving Spirit in you: which renews your body, spirit & soul and gives New Life. (Jh 6:63)

RENEWAL – "A SPIRITUAL WOUNDER"

This spiritual wonder is real experience. Faithful people experience this spiritual renewal because Wisdom which is the power of God, Spirit of God, breath God, love of God, and

presence of God, renews their whole being when they worship & praise God. Also they experience this renewal when they repent for their sins and get reconciled with God through the Sacrament of Confession. (Wis 7:23-27)

When we surrender our whole being to God, we experience this continuous spiritual renewal in our thoughts, in our words, in our mind, in our heart, in our actions, in our body, in our soul and in our worship. Thus our life is renewed day-by-day. In this spiritual processes, all our impurities are cleansed because, Jesus said; "you will be cleansed by my teachings". (Jh 15:3) Every stronghold, every false argument and proud obstacles in us standing against the Kingdom of God will be thrashed. God will make every captive thought to obey Christ. (2 Cor 10:3-6) Thus we will be spiritually renewed and become a new being in Christ as St Paul brought out in Chapters 2 & 3 in the book Colossians.

King Solomon calls this process as 'Merciful disciplining'.

He said; "God's immortal Spirit is there in every one of them and so God gently corrects those who sin against him. God reminds them of what they are doing and warn them about it, so that they may abandon their sinful ways and put their trust in the Lord. (Wis 12:1-2) Dear believers, every time we sin, repent and reconcile with God through Sacrament of Confession, he forgives us and renews us spiritually by correcting our ways. Sin causes sickness in our spirit, soul and body because when we sin, we hurt ourselves. (Sir 19:4) Every time we sin the Satan binds our whole being with invisible chains. (Wis 17:17)

When we confess our sins and receive absolution, we experience anointment of the Holy Spirit. This anointment delivers our spiritual body, soul and physical body from the invisible chains which have bound them /enslaved them. Once delivered from these invisible chains, we experience freedom in our spirit, soul and healing in our body. This is how God renews faithful people every time when they repent and confess their sins, because he is faithful to his promise which says; **'The Spirit is the guarantee that we shall receive what God has promised his people and assures that God will give complete freedom to those who are his. Let us praise his glory'**. (Eph 1:14) This is how our old being will be renewed in the Sacrament of Confession. Yes our old will be gone and a new being will be restored in union with Jesus, which is the Spiritual Renewal. (2 Cor 5:17)

In this renewal God will lead us in the road of Holiness. Yes, this spiritual renewal is a continuous process that is taking place in faithful people who surrender their life and allow God's Spirit to work in them. God's Spirit will lead them in light of the Lord. They will be strong enough for any occasion. (Sir 50:28-29) They will not fall prey for temptations, (or) fall prey for their inner weakness/desires to commit sin, (or) fall prey to any situation that may lure them to commit sin. Because, they will be transformed inwardly by a complete change of mind. They will be able to understand God's will for them, what is good and pleasing God and perfect. (Rom 12:1-2)

They will be like trees growing near a stream that never goes dry. They will send their roots down to the stream and remain green whatever season it may be. (It means; at times of spiritual distress, they will remain firm. - Is 44:4) They will receive special grace which will strengthen them to live a holy life in God's service as Prophet Isaiah said; "He strengthens (our spirit) those who are weak and tired. (Tired of sinning). Even those who are young may grow weak (grow weak for sin); young men can fall exhausted (because of sins). But those who trust in the Lord for help will find their strength renewed. They will raise on wings like eagles; they will run and not get weary; they will walk and not grow weak. (Is 40:29-31)

In such spiritual renewal experience, God will teach us many spiritual truths, will enrich us in Wisdom, and give us revelations about hidden secrets. The secret is; "Christ is the key that opens the hidden treasures of God's wisdom and knowledge". (Col 2:2-3) Further, God will lead us to walk in the road of holiness as he said; "There will be a high way called; "The Road of Holiness." No sinner will ever travel in that road; no fools will mislead those are following it. No lions will be there, no fierce animal will pass that way. Those whom the Lord has rescued will travel home by that road. They will reach Jerusalem with gladness singing and shouting for joy. They will be happy for ever, forever free from sorrow and grief. (Is 35:8-10)

"GOD IS CONSTANTLY RENEWING HIS IMAGE IN US"

St Paul speaks at length about this spiritual renewal in the book Colossians. He said that; "We were at one time spiritually dead because of our sins. But God has now brought us to life in our union with Christ. He cancelled the unfavourable record of our sins with its binding rules and did away with it by completely nailing it on the cross. So let no one make rules about what you eat or drink or about holy days or New Moon festival or Sabbath. All such things are only

a shadow of the past; the reality is Christ. (Col 2:13-16) In union with Christ you were circumcised, not with circumcision made by man, but with circumcision made by Christ which consists of being freed from power of sinful-self. (Col 2:11)

This is the new being, in which God the Creator is constantly renewing his own image in us, in order to bring us to full knowledge of himself. As a result there is no longer distinction between Gentiles and Jews, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarians and savages, slaves and freemen, but Christ is all, Christ is in all.(Col 3:10-11) This is the real spiritual renewal that we receive every time when we turn back to God in repentance and receive his forgiveness.

Yes dear believer in Christ, God made us sinful so that we may experience this continuous spiritual renewal and glorify God in our life. Faithful people experience this process "Continuous Spiritual Renewal" through the Sacrament of Confession /Reconciliation. (Reader is advised to read all three chapters in the Book Colossians, to understand spiritual renewal in depth)

REASON -7. WE ARE MADE SINFUL AND WEAK

TO RECEIVE SURE FOUNDATION

"We receive the Gift - Fear of the Lord"

Any sin gains full attraction before it is committed. Once we commit sin we also experience its consequences and learn that Satan has deceived us to destroy our blessings provided we are wise to understand and conscious about spiritual life. The great blessing that we lose in sin is; "the presence of Holy Spirit in us". Hence we live in fear, depression, sadness, anxiety, anger, and spiritual distress. These negative attributes destroys our peace & joy. In repentance if we confess our sins to a Roman Catholic Priest, receive absolution through Sacrament of Confession, then God's presence returns in us.

In forgiveness of sins, we are renewed spiritually. We regain our lost paradise. This experience will make us to think twice before we commit sin again, because the Holy Spirit warns us about the consequences of sin. This experience will bring a change in our attitude towards sin. **Yes, "it will cause fear in our heart to commit sin again," because we are aware that we will lose presence of Holy Spirit in us, if we sin.** *Now, we are aware that sin hurts us, (Sir 19:4) and it causes us to lose blessings which we*

received in obedience. (Duet 28:15-68) Further, we understand that the negative attributes of sin will destroy the peace and joy of the Lord which we are enjoying. A wise person who understands these spiritual truths will fear to commit sin again. This fear is called as; "Fear of the Lord." It is a "Precious Gift" from God.

The Lord blesses a person who fears him. For he said:

- > *To fear the Lord is the first step to wisdom. (Sir 1:14)*
- > *To fear the Lord is the Wisdom at her fullest. (Sir 1:15)*
- > *To fear the Lord is the flower of Wisdom which blossoms with peace and good health. (Sir 1:18)*
- > *To fear the Lord is the root of Wisdom; her branches are long life. (Sir 1:20)*
- > *Fearing the Lord is Wisdom and Education itself. (Sir 1:27)*
- > *A person who fears the Lord make real friendship, because he will treat his friend as he does to himself. (Sir 6:17)*
- > *If you fear the Lord you will accept corrections. He will bless those who get up in the early morning and pray. (Sir 32:14)*
- > *Those who fear the Lord will live full life, because they have put trust in God who can save them. (Sir 34:13)*
- > *Fear the Lord, you will have nothing else to fear. If you trust him you will never act like a coward. (Sir 34:14)*
- > *People who fear the Lord are fortunate, because they know where they can look for help. (Sir 34:15)*
- > *Fear of the Lord can give you greater confidence than wealth and strength. (Sir 40:26)*
- > *Fear of the Lord is like rich garden of blessings; you could not want a more glorious shelter. (Sir 40:27)*

Fear of God brings inward transformation to grow in Spirit.

Over a period of time, sins that we committed repeatedly do not have same attraction which we had when we committed that sin at first time. Because, we know that sin will destroy our blessings. This brings fear of God in us. Further, when we confess our sins and receive absolution in the Sacrament of Confession, we also receive anointment of 'the Holy Spirit' which fills us with God's grace. **Over a period, this grace will transform us to become strong in our inner-self. (Ezkl 3:8-9) We will be able to resist temptations, and overcome our weaknesses & inner desires to commit sin. (Jer 15:19-21)** At this juncture, if we read Bible twice every day as God said; "sow the seed twice a day," (Eccl 11:6) meditate on God's Words, (Sir 6:37) and practice what we read in Bible, then God will give us insight & wisdom. This insight & wisdom will help us to understand; what is God's will for us? And, what is the purpose of our existence on earth?

"The purpose of our existence is to glorify God's Spirit in us" as we read below:

> *"They are my people. I created them to glorify me. (Is 43:7)*

>> *"They are my people, and I will be their God. I will give them a single purpose in life; to honour me (to obey me) for all time, for their own good & for good of their descendants". (Jer 32:38)*

>>> *"Avoid immorality (including all kinds of sins) any other sin a man commits does not affect man's body; but a man who commits sexual sins, sins against his own body. Don't you know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who lives in you and who was given to you by God? You do not belong to yourselves but to God; he bought you for a price. (Blood of Jesus Christ) So, use your body for God's glory. (1 Cor 6:18-20)*

>>>> *If we continue to glorify God by living in obedience, we will be walking closely with him in his light. (Sir 50:28-29) God will reveal his plan for us. This will be God's will for us. We will come to know his plan or his will for us through faith. (1 Tim 1:4)*

The understanding about "fear of God" & "God's will for us" will transform us inwardly. It will make us think many times before we yield ourselves for temptation to commit sin. *Rather, the awareness about blessings that we receive in fear of God and knowledge of God's will for us will give us grace to overcome temptations, our weaknesses, and our sinful desires which are luring us to fall in sin repeatedly. Further, this grace will give us power to reject sin for all time to come. (Prov 2:9-16)*

Such spiritual experience will make to realise the overshadowing of Holy Spirit on us, which means we will receive freedom from the power of sin. For God said; *"The Holy Spirit is the guarantee that we shall receive what God has promised his people. And this assures that God will give complete freedom 'from sin' to who belong to him."* (Eph 1:14) *This understanding will help us to grow in spiritual life continually.*

St Peter invites us to protect this spiritual experience. He said; "My brother try even harder to make God's call and his choice of you a "Permanent Experience." If you do so, you will never abandon your faith. In this way you will be given full right to enter the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ."(2 Pet 1:10-11) *When*

we realise God's call and his choice for us, we will experience intimate and intense love of Christ. This will transform our heart & mind and help us to grow in Spirit.

We will become as firm as a rock and as hard as a diamond by reading more and more of God's Words and accepting them with sincere heart and mind. Yes, God's words will act as a hammer in us to break our strongholds, proud obstacles, false arguments and all our weaknesses & sinful desires which are holding us as captives for sin and as slaves for Satan. Because, God said; "My message (God's Words) is like a fire and like a hammer that breaks rocks (our sinful-self) into pieces." (Jer 23:29) It means, we will be cleansed from all our impurities by the richness (Gal 5:22 & Col 3:16) and power in God's Words. (Ps 62:11) This is what Jesus Christ said to his disciples; "you have been already cleansed by my teachings." (Jh 15:3) When we are cleansed, fear of God and consciousness of God's will for us will make us as firm as rock and as hard as diamond in our inner-self to fight against all our weaknesses and sinful-desires which lure us to commit sin repeatedly. (Ezkl 3:8-9)

"God assures to strengthen your inner-self".

God promises that he will strengthen your inner-self after all the suffering that you have gone through due to sin. You will be like an iron pillar and a bronze wall in your determination to resist and reject sin. Your weaknesses for lust, greed, pride, anger, hatred, enmity, revenge, desire for money, desire for power, and other sinful desires which makes you to fall in sin will fight against you. But they cannot make you fall because, God will be with you to protect you as he promised that: "Today I am giving you the strength to resist them; you will be like a fortified city, an iron pillar and a bronze wall. They (your weaknesses / sinful desires) will not defeat you, for I will be with you to protect you. I the Lord have spoken." (Jer 1:18-19)

Once again God promises that he will make you as a wall of bronze against your weakness and sinful-desires which causes you to yield for sin. Your sinful-self and the worldly attractions cannot make you fall. They will have no influence upon you, because, God said; "If you return to me, I will take you back and you will be my servant again. Instead of talking nonsense, if you proclaim a worthwhile message, (read my words) you will be my prophet again. I will make you like a solid bronze wall as far as they are concerned. (Your weaknesses & sinful-desires are concerned) They (your weaknesses / desires) will fight against you, but they will not defeat

you. I will be with you to protect you and keep you safe. I will rescue you from the power of the wicked. (God will rescue you from your sinful-self) I the Lord have spoken" (Jer 15:19-21)

"Circumcision made by Christ"

Yes, God will make you as a wall of bronze against all your past sins, memories of past sins, temptations, sinful attraction of the world, your weaknesses and your sinful-desires which are luring you to commit sin repeatedly. God will give you power to reject the Satan and his tricks. You will become strong in God's Spirit and in God's Wisdom which will protect you from the power of sin. Thus you will gain freedom from your sinful-self. This is called as true circumcision which was spoken by St Paul. He said; "I union with Christ you were circumcised, not with the circumcision made by man, but with the circumcision made by Christ, which consists of being freed from the power of this "Sinful-Self".(Col 2:11).

WE ARE GIVEN "SURE FOUNDATION" IN FAITH

When you reach this stage in spiritual life, the Word of God which you have sowed in your heart and mind will strengthen you in all your weaknesses which makes us to commit sin. God will give you conviction, courage, confidence and power to resist all your weaknesses, sinful attractions, sinful desires and temptations to commit sin. In your spiritual life you will receive grace to walk on your sinful desires and weaknesses as Jesus walked on water.

Yes, you will walk on your weaknesses and sinful desires because, you have allowed Jesus to enter in every area of your life to strengthen you, as Jesus said; "I stand at the door and knock; if any one hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in to his house and eat with him and he will eat with me"(Rev 3:20) Yes, Jesus will be with you in every area of your life to put down all the burning arrows of the Evil One.(Eph 6:16)

Since you have allowed Jesus to enter in your life, he will give you power and authority over your sinful-self as he promised;

"I have given you authority (power) to walk on snakes (your sinful desires and weaknesses) and scorpions (worldly attractions that are luring us) and overcome the power of the enemy. The Satan cannot harm you." (Luke 10:19) This promise will become a reality in our life. This is how God wants to bless his children so that we receive this firmness and strength against sin in our spiritual life.

This is the SURE FOUNDATION what God has promised us.

He said; *"After you have suffered for a little while, the God of all graces, who calls you to share his eternal glory in union with Christ will perfect you and give you firmness, strength, and Sure Foundation"(1 Pet 5:10) **When you receive this sure foundation you will be like a rock.** The Satan will have no power over you. The words spoken by Jesus to St Peter as given below will be a reality in life for you. **Jesus said to Peter; "You are a rock. On this foundation I will build my church. Not even Satan will ever be able to overcome it."**(Mat 16:18)*

GOD USES OUR SURE FOUNDATION FOR SALVATION.

More sins we commit, God fills us with more & more of his graces. Yes, God said; **"Where the sins increased, God's grace increased much more.**(Rom 5:20) God fills sinners with more and more of his graces to strengthen them so as to redeem them from the clutches of their weaknesses which makes them yield for temptations and fall in sin. We read that, St Paul persecuted the Christians. St Augustine was living in sin for eighteen years. But, they were redeemed from their sinfulness and became great evangelist of the world. Because, every time they committed sin, God filled them with more and more of his grace to redeem them.

Yes dear believer in Christ, if you are alive for God's call to witness Christ and if you take your call seriously, you will experience this spiritual truth, i.e., "when your sins increase, God's grace for you will also increase". Because God waits for you patiently, as he said; "All day long I held out my hands to welcome a disobedient and rebellious people" (Rom 10:21). This is how God make use of your weakness to strengthen you against your sinfulness through his grace to give you "Sure Foundation".

You are given 'Sure Foundation' so that you may be used for God's glory. Yes, God will use you to complete his work in Salvation. Thus the following Words of God are fulfilled:

- > *"He is the God who makes me strong, who makes my path way safe".*
- > *"He makes me a sure footed deer. He keeps me safe on the mountains"*
- > *"He trains me for battle so that I can use the strongest bow" (Ps 18:32-34)*

- > "He trains me for a battle and prepares me for war" (Ps 144:1)
- > Yes, "The Lord has called his proud & confident soldiers to fight a holy war and punish those whom he is angry with" (Is 13:3)

The above promises will be fulfilled in your life if you make choice of his call (everyone are called) **and 'his presence'** (through his words) **as permanent experience in your life**, for God said:

"Try even harder to make God's call and his choice of you a permanent experience; if you do so you will never abandon your faith. In this way you will be given the full right to enter the eternal Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ."(2 Pet 1:10-11)

If you respond to the above Word of God "positively and sincerely" you will experience God's faithfulness in your life for the following promises.

>> "He will also keep you firm to the end so that you will be faultless on the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Cor 1:8)

Surely all promises of God will be fulfilled because:

>> "Jesus Christ is the 'Yes' for all promises of God the Father" (2 Cor 1:20).

>> "The Lord who called you will do it because he is faithful." (1Thess 5:24)

>> "Our God remains faithful to his promises; because he cannot be false to himself. (2 Tim 2:13)

Dear Believers,

"Tremble with fear and stop sinning; think deeply about this when you lie in silence on your bed. Offer right sacrifice to the LORD and put your trust in him."
(Psalms 4:4-5)

QUESTION NO-23

WHO IS MY GOD?

Are you still searching to find your God?

It was I who is the Lord your God had been speaking to you through all these Questions and Answers. Do not search for me anywhere. If you listen to my voice (Words) and obey my teachings and commandments, you will feel my presence around you.

You will experience that my presence giving you joy, my power always protecting you from all dangers, my voice counselling you in your problems, my eternal light guiding you in the righteous path, my words giving you peace, my love healing your wounded heart, mind, spirit and soul, my hands comforting you in your distress, my Spirit bringing life to your body, my peace guiding you in all your decisions, my forgiving love absolving your sins, my awesome Holiness fighting for you to deliver you from the Satan, and my sacrificial love giving you Salvation.

I am God who dwell in my Words and I also live in my temple. Yes, you are my temple where I live. I am present in every human being. I dwell in your body which is my Temple. My Words say that; "Surely you know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit lives in you. God's temple is Holy; and you yourselves are his temple." (1 Cor 3:16-17) So, you do not have to search for me anymore, for I live in you! Do not desecrate my temple by sinning.

My only desire is: "You should honour my temple by keeping it Holy". So, allow me to cleanse you and allow me to work in you by humbling and surrendering yourself, so that I may use you as my instrument for every good deed. Through you I can reach many suffering children, give them my Love, Joy, Peace, my Presence and lead them in the path of Salvation. (2 Tim 2:21-22)

***I, the Lord your God have spoken!
Do you hear me calling?***

Author's Final Note

Dear believers in Christ,

I was guided by the Spirit of the LORD to write this book. It was not written overnight. Though I started writing this book in the year 2001, I completed it in 2004. However the book was revised and edited during the year 2020-21. The original book underwent major changes and was segregated as 'The Answer Part-I' and 'The Answer Part-II'. The text of the original book was changed based on 'Various Spiritual Experience' that I gained in the last twenty years.

The Chapter "Why God Permitted Man to fall in Sin?" may be difficult to accept. But all seven reasons advanced, with explanations substantiated by Word of God makes one to understand the "Complexity of God's will for man". One may have a different opinion about it. But I have not given my opinion or theory about it. I have written what the Holy Spirit revealed to me. If you meditate on the discourse in this Chapter, God will give you the insight, wisdom and understanding to comprehend and appreciate the "Complexity in God's Eternal Plan for Mankind in Salvation."

This book will surely help believers to rebuild their spiritual life, and experience "New life in Christ" (Col 3:5-25) and realise "Fullness of Christ" with-in them. (Col2:6-19) You may share with me your reflections and any unanswered question in your life for an answer, if you so desire through e-mail:annaraj2461@gmail.com (Or) WhatsApp No: 9205840702



***I am the Good Shepherd. My Sheep listen to my voice.
(John 10: 14 & 27)***

While hanging on the cross Jesus saw his Disciples whom he entrusted to build the Church and his Mother. He said to the Disciples;

“She is your Mother”

(John 19:27)

Thus, Mother Mary became the Guardian of the Church.

